

Siepmann's Elementary French Series

General Editors { OTTO SIEPMANN
FÉLIX PFITZNER

NAPOLÉON



N A P O L É O N

PAR
ALEXANDRE DUMAS

ADAPTED AND EDITED
BY
W. W. VAUGHAN, M.A.
ASSISTANT MASTER AT CLIFTON COLLEGE

London
MACMILLAN AND CO., LIMITED
NEW YORK. THE MACMILLAN COMPANY
1902

All rights reserved

GENERAL PREFACE TO THE SERIES

THIS series introduces a number of works by distinguished French authors, such as de Vogué and Émile Pouillon, who are prominent in their own country, but whose books have not yet received that recognition among our school classics which is their due, it will also include some of the best productions of Daudet, Coppée, Theuriet, and others, of which no English school editions exist, and finally it will contain a few works which, although more familiar, may yet, it is hoped, be welcome in an edition framed on the plan here advocated.

The *advanced* texts are intended for pupils of the Fifth and Sixth forms, and are therefore longer (80–150 pages) and more difficult. The *elementary* texts are shorter (40–80 pages) and

fairly easy, so as to suit Third and Fourth forms; to these a vocabulary will be added.

Each volume contains enough matter for *one* or *two* terms' reading. The editors, while taking care that the works selected should arouse the pupils' interest, should furnish them with a practical vocabulary and useful phraseology, and should help to cultivate literary taste, will also include in their selection such books as will enable the English reader to acquire a knowledge of France and her institutions, of French life and customs, or, as Thackeray puts it, "to study the inward thoughts and ways of his neighbours."

The *Notes* are not intended to give merely a translation of the difficult passages, nor are they meant to be a storehouse of grammatical curiosities or of philological learning. They aim rather at giving in a clear and concise form such explanations as will help the pupil to overcome all textual difficulties which are out of his reach, and at elucidating historical, geographical, and literary allusions; while reminding the reader at the same time of points of grammar and of constructions which he is apt to forget, illustrating these by parallels taken, if possible, from other parts of the text. As to renderings, the object,

as a rule, is to throw out a hint for the solution of a difficulty rather than to give the solution itself, without, however, excluding the translation of such passages as the pupil cannot be expected to render satisfactorily into good English. Comments are introduced on French life and thought whenever the text affords an opportunity for them. Lastly, information is supplied on word-formation and derivation, where such knowledge is likely to be of real help towards a complete grasp of the various meanings of words, or where it may serve as an aid to the memory.

The *Introduction* will in each case give a short account of the author and his works, with special reference to the text of the particular volume.

Appendices will be added to each volume by the General Editors, containing—(1) lists of words and phrases for *viva voce* drill, which should be learned *pari passu* with the reading; (2) exercises on syntax and idioms for *viva voce* practice, which will involve the vocabulary of a certain portion of the text; (3) continuous passages for translation into French, which will bring composition and construing lessons into close relation, (4) some chapter on word-formation or etymology of a practical nature.

The addition of these appendices calls perhaps for explanation.

Appendix I.—The practical experience of teachers, the continually recurring verdict of examiners, any man's personal recollection of his own earlier labours in acquiring a new language—all go to prove that want of vocabulary and phraseology is one of the main difficulties with which the learner has always to contend. "Take a dictionary and learn it by heart" is idle advice; teachers and learners alike agree that the sense of a word or phrase is best grasped and most easily remembered in connexion with some context. Again, the system by which each pupil records in a note-book for subsequent revision unfamiliar words and phrases is educationally sound, and has some advantages: the pupil makes the mental effort of selection, and the words so selected are adapted to his special needs. But this system has also many drawbacks: words are often misquoted or misspelt; the revision, if left to the pupil, is often neglected, and if conducted by the master is, in a class of any size, impracticable. The present appendices are designed, not to do away with the pupil's note-book, but to make the revision of a large number of

words and phrases practicable in the class-room. It is true that some of the words chosen may be already known to a portion of the class, but the repetition of a few familiar phrases does no harm, while the gain in certainty and facility of revision, and still more in point of time, is enormous. No enunciation of the English is necessary; and it is astonishing how rapidly a form or set, with the page in front of them, will run down a column, and reproduce, in correct French, words and phrases which they have been through once or twice before.

It may be mentioned that the plan is not a theoretical one. Trial has proved its value beyond anticipation. It has also shown that the pupils themselves soon begin to like this drill, as they feel a growing and tangible addition to their knowledge from week to week.¹

Appendices II. and III.—There is no need to say anything of these, as it is now generally recognised that the reading-book should form the nucleus of all instruction in languages.

Appendix IV. is necessarily not exhaustive. But “half a loaf is better than no bread.” Word-

¹ The lists placed at the end of the text contain the English only. Separate lists, with the French added, will also be published for the benefit of masters who might wish their pupils to learn them in home-preparation.

formation and etymology are not usually dealt with in grammars; moreover, a complete treatment of the subject would be out of place in schools. But some knowledge of word-building and derivation is of interest and use even to school-boys, and is constantly demanded in our military and other examinations. A short chapter has therefore been added to each of the advanced texts.

In conclusion: as is obvious from the above, it is the object of the present series that the pupil should draw from each successive book some permanent possession in the way of linguistic knowledge and general culture; that the study of each text, while partly an end in itself, should still more be treated as a means to something wider and more lasting.

If this object is to be attained, it is necessary that the pupil should not merely learn to translate the text, but that he should enter into the subject matter and, to some extent, into the life and interests of the people whose literature he is reading; at the same time he should learn to speak in the foreign language. This result can only be obtained by treating language as a living thing, i.e. by such constant repetition as has been suggested of the words and phrases that occur;

by regular application of what has been learnt, in *viva voce* practice of reproductory exercises and prose passages based on the text: moreover, by careful attention to pronunciation, and by frequent questions, asked and answered in French, upon the subject matter of the book. It is hoped that no teacher will fail to make such conversational practice an integral part of his work.

CONTENTS

	PAGE
MAP OF EUROPE <i>facing</i>	1
INTRODUCTION	xv
THE FAMILY OF THE BONAPARTES	xix
CHIEF DATES	xxi
LIFE OF NAPOLEON	xxiii
PLAN TO EXPLAIN WATERLOO CAMPAIGN <i>facing</i>	1
TEXT	1
NOTES	65
LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS	89
VOCABULARY	99
APPENDICES BY THE GENERAL EDITORS—	
I. WORDS AND PHRASES FOR <i>VIVA VOCE</i> DRILL	131
II. SENTENCES ON SYNTAX AND IDIOMS FOR <i>VIVA VOCE</i> PRACTICE	137
III. PASSAGES FOR TRANSLATION INTO FRENCH	149

INTRODUCTION

ALEXANDRE DUMAS was born in 1803 at Villers-Cotterets, a town half-way between Laon and Paris. He was the son of a general in the Revolutionary War, and when he was still quite young began earning his living in a notary's office. At twenty he made his way to Paris, and was lucky enough to be taken into the service of the Duke of Orleans as clerk. This post he held for eight years. Even before he came to Paris he had begun to write plays, but it was not until 1829 that he scored his first real success by the drama of *Henri III et sa Cour*. This was brought out at the Théâtre Français, and, though not so deliberate, was as definite an innovation in style, arrangement, and language as Victor Hugo's *Hernani* produced the same year. He soon struck a new vein of writing, which was to bring him more wealth and fame than the drama. This was the writing of historical romances.

In 1844 he published his two most celebrated novels, *Les Trois Mousquetaires* and *Le Comte de Monte-Christo*. The material for most of his stories he found in the old historical memoirs. As a rule he chose and arranged it artistically. Now and then, however, whole pieces are clumsily conveyed from his authorities; and in this respect his work falls far below that of his great English predecessor, Sir Walter Scott. It is, however, almost impossible to exaggerate the pleasure that his tales, especially *La Reine Margot*, *La Tulipe Noire*, *La Dame de Montsoreau*, *Le Vicomte de Bragelonne*, *Vingt Ans Après*, and the two already mentioned, have given, even in translations, to readers of every nation. In all he published more than a thousand volumes, including many plays, of which *Henri III et sa Cour*, *Antony*, *La Tour de Nesle*, and *Mlle de Belle-Isle* are the most famous. To produce all this he employed several assistants, who did the subordinate parts; but it was his genius alone that gave life to the whole, and it was his name alone that had a right to appear on the title-pages of the books that had often been actually written, and sometimes spoiled, by collaborators. The vast fortune which he so easily gained was rapidly spent. Travel in every part of the world provided him with material

for more books and for his *Memoirs*. In 1860 he accompanied Garibaldi in his romantic and successful march to Naples. He died near Dieppe in December 1870, nearly two months before the heroic defence of Paris had to be abandoned. His son, always known as Alexandre Dumas Fils, has made the name of Dumas for a second time famous as a writer of novels and plays.

This account of the latter part of Napoleon's life is taken from Dumas' *Vie de Napoléon*. As it was necessary, in order to meet the requirements of this series, to shorten even that short narrative, Dumas' account of the battle of Waterloo, full as it is of small inaccuracies, has been omitted, and in its place Léon Meyniel's succinct description of the battle has been given. In this way controversy upon disputed military questions has been avoided, and the true cause of Napoleon's fall—namely, the fact that he was attempting an impossible task—has not been obscured by dwelling on the mistakes made by himself and his marshals during the actual engagement.

It is impossible to understand and appreciate the last act in the Napoleonic tragedy, or even to excuse the treatment finally meted out to him by the Allies, without knowing something of his life

before 1814. For this reason a short account of his career and the events that led up to it has been added. But it must be remembered that in so short a space justice could not be done to his military genius, to the devotion of his generals, or to the splendid and characteristic bravery of the French soldiers

I must not let slip this opportunity of thanking Mr. C. H. Spence and Mr. H. W. Household for their kindness in reading through the proofs of the Introduction and Notes, and for their fruitful suggestions.

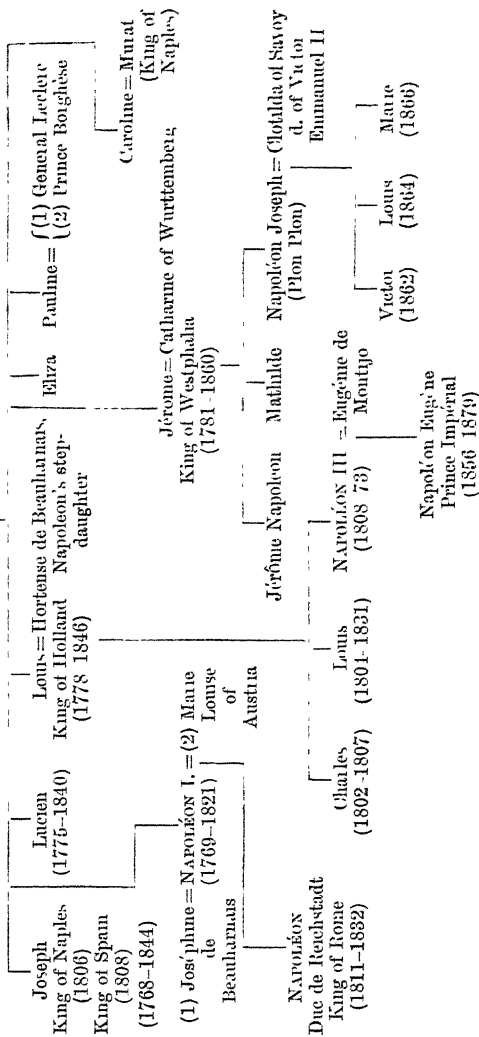
In the maps I have had valuable help from C. C. S. Brownlow, and C. R. Goss.

W. W. V.

CLIFTON COLLEGE,
January 1902.

THE FAMILY OF THE BONAPARTES

Charles de Bonaparte (1746-1785) = Laetitia Ramolino (1750-1839)



CHIEF DATES

- 1768. Corsica sold to France by Genoa
- 1769. Birth of Napoleon.
- 1774. Accession of Louis XVI.
- 1789. Meeting of the States General, May 5.
Fall of the Bastille, July 14
- 1790. Fete of the Federation
- 1791. Legislative Assembly
- 1792. Abolition of Royalty
Battle of Jemmapes.
The Convention
- 1793. Execution of Louis XVI.
Reign of Terror, September.
- 1794. Napoleon at Toulon
- 1795. Fall of Robespierre.
Napoleon suppresses Rising in Paris (13th Vendémiaire).
The Directory.
Marriage.
- 1796. First Italian Campaign—Lodi, Arcola, Rivoli.
- 1797. Treaty of Campo Formio
Reconstitution of the Directory.
- 1798. Egyptian Expedition—Battle of Pyramids
- 1799. Napoleon First Consul (18th Brumaire)
- 1800. Second Italy Campaign—Marengo.
Hohenlinden.
- 1802. Peace of Amiens.
Consul for Life.
- 1804. Emperor.

- 1805. Austrian Campaign—Ulm, Austerlitz.
Trafalgar
- 1806. Prussian Campaign—Jena, Auerstadt
Berlin Decrees
- 1807. Eylau, Friedland.
Treaty of Tilsit.
- 1808. Peninsular War.
- 1809. Austrian Campaign—Wagram
Treaty of Vienna.
Second Marriage
- 1812. Invasion of Russia—Borodino.
Retreat from Moscow.
- 1813. War with Prussia and Russia.
Leipzig.
- 1814. Abdication
Congress of Vienna.
- 1815. The Hundred Days.
Napoleon sent to St. Helena
- 1821. Death.

LIFE OF NAPOLEON

IN the sixteenth century the family of Buonaparte emigrated from Florence to Corsica. They settled at Ajaccio, where they enjoyed a certain consideration as petty lords in a land of peasants. Though they kept their Italian title of nobility, their fortunes had sadly declined when Charles de Buonaparte¹ was born in 1746. Beginning life as a small lawyer, he married Laetitia Ramolino, then a mere girl, of great beauty, strength of mind, and intelligence. Napoleon, born August 15, 1769, was the second son of this marriage. Shortly before his birth Corsica had succeeded in throwing off the yoke of Genoa, and had gained a temporary independence under the inspiring leadership of Paoli. The Genoese, dreading the long struggle necessary to subdue the island, sold their rights over it to the French. For a time the inhabitants resisted this new yoke, but their efforts were soon crushed and Paoli went, as an exile, to England. Napoleon's

¹ Napoleon was technically 'noble.' The *de* finally disappeared when a Republic succeeded the Monarchy.

parents, like many of the leading families, abandoned the cause of independence and became servile supporters of the French power. They were rewarded by obtaining for Napoleon, at the age of ten, admission to the famous military school at Brienne. Here he stayed until 1784, winning a character for determination and intelligence, but not the affection of his masters or his fellows. After a year in the military school in Paris he became a sub-lieutenant of artillery in the regiment of La Fère, then stationed at Valence, a town on the Rhone.

The French army was at this period in an evil plight. The men were recruited recklessly. The officers were ignorant and careless of their profession. Promotion depended upon the possession of wealth and influence. The prospects of a young man without either of these were not brilliant. Napoleon at the age of sixteen could look forward to becoming a captain in fifteen years, to remaining a captain for fifteen years, to being retired at the age of forty-six with possibly the Cross of St. Louis as a consolation.

In spite of this outlook he was happy in his freedom from the restraints of the military school and the close contact with his noble competitors, who treated the uncouth and swarthy southerner with insolence and suspicion.

For the next five years, with the exception of a long holiday taken to look after his family affairs, which were now in a sad way, and partly spent in writing a history of Corsica, he served in different

parts of France, working hard at his profession and devoting his spare time to the study of theology, philosophy, and politics.

Corsica was declared a province of France by the National Assembly in 1789, and Paoli returned to the island after a banishment of twenty-one years to share with Salicetti the control of local affairs. Napoleon joined them, but not for long. A successful attempt to get command of the local forces led in 1792 to another to get possession of Ajaccio. This failed, and Napoleon had to leave the island. Thanks to the chaos then reigning in France his military delinquencies were overlooked, and on his return to Corsica he threw his weight into the scale against Paoli and the national party, and helped Salicetti to champion the claims of France. Paoli's supporters were, however, too strong for him, and the whole Buonaparte family were compelled to leave their island-home and take refuge in France.

To follow Napoleon's subsequent career it is necessary to understand what had been happening in France.

Louis XIV. had died in 1715, leaving to his successor a vast inheritance over which the king was supreme. Louis's boast "*L'État, c'est moi*" was literally true. His successor, by the extravagance and licentiousness of his life, made the situation still worse, and could with equal truth exclaim on his death-bed "*Après moi le déluge.*"

Louis XVI. took up his legacy in 1774. Ruin

stared the country in the face. The people into whose minds the doctrines of Voltaire and Rousseau, Montesquieu and Diderot, had gradually filtered, were asking on what principles the authority of the king, the privileges of the nobles and clergy really rested; why the burden of the taxes should be borne by the peasants, whilst the clergy were partly, the nobles entirely, exempt from taxation.

Louis's excellent intentions and half-hearted measures did little to remedy the situation. Heroic attempts were made by his ministers, Turgot and Necker, but they were hampered by court influences, and the disease was too deep-seated for any ordinary medicine. In 1788 Louis was forced to summon the States-General. This body, which had existed since the thirteenth century but had not met since the year 1615, consisted of representatives of the nobles, clergy, and people. It met at Versailles on May 5, 1789. Before June was over the *tiers-état*, strong in their superior numbers, had assumed the title of "National Assembly." On July 14 the Bastille fell. The Revolution had begun.

In August the king was forced to assent to the abolition by the Assembly of all the privileges, exemptions, and rights, the possession of which by the nobles and clergy marked the *ancien régime*. In October the royal family were forcibly escorted from Versailles to Paris by a mob in which the women were prominent. A more peaceful year followed, during which many real reforms were

carried. At the Fête de la Fédération, held in the Champs de Mars on the first anniversary of the fall of the Bastille, Louis took the oath of fidelity to the new Constitution. The storm was, however, soon to break out anew. In the spring of 1791 Mirabeau, the one possible controlling force, died. The situation was further aggravated two months later by the king's ill-advised and abortive flight, in which he only got as far as Varennes. In September the Constituent National Assembly was dissolved and its place taken by the Legislative Assembly of 745 members, elected by bodies which had in their turn been elected by all citizens over twenty-five years of age who paid in taxes the value of three days' wages. In this Assembly, from which the members of the Constituent Assembly had excluded themselves by a self-denying ordinance, there were three parties:—(1) The right, or Feuillants, as they were called, from meeting in the convent of the Feuillants, who were satisfied with the reforms already carried. (2) The left, or moderate Republicans, called Girondins, because many of their chief members represented the district of the Gironde. (3) The extreme Republicans, who sat on the top benches and were called Montagnards. The members of this latter party were recruited in, and inspired by, the Jacobin and Cordelier Clubs.

At the outset the Girondins were in power. Before long, in great measure owing to the intrigues of the *émigrés* and the consequent in-

terference of Austria and Prussia, the centre of gravity shifted. In August the Tuileries were attacked by the people, and, in spite of the heroic defence of the Swiss guard, the king and royal family were consigned to the Temple, at first their residence, but soon to become their prison. The Jacobin municipality or Commune of Paris now seized the power, and treated the Assembly as a registering body to give some show of legality to their actions. Danton, the head of the extreme party, with the help of Marat, organised a massacre of the prominent royalists in September 1792. In this same autumn the Legislative Assembly ordered the election of a National Assembly to be chosen by the people at large. The new body, called the Convention, inaugurated its existence by deposing the king and proclaiming a Republic. Before it was four months old it had tried and condemned the king, who was guillotined on January 21, 1793. This act still further infuriated Europe, and alienated many of the friends of the Revolution inside and outside France. England, against her will, was forced into the struggle. By the Triple Alliance of 1788 she was bound to defend Holland, now threatened by Dumouriez. After the death of Louis, the French agent, who tried to stir up a revolution in England, was ordered to leave the country. On February 1, 1793 the Convention declared war against Great Britain and Holland. France was face to face with Europe. At this juncture Dumouriez, who had

defeated the Austrians at Jemmapes (Nov. 1792), and had vainly interceded for Louis's life, was himself defeated at Neerwinden by the Austrians and driven out of the Netherlands. He immediately entered into negotiations with his conquerors, and in April, seeing that it was hopeless to restore a constitutional monarchy, took refuge in the Austrian camp.

Almost at the same time the Committee of Public Safety was formed, and empowered to take any steps necessary for the safety of the Republic. The Reign of Terror, as the rule of this committee is called, began with the arrest of the Girondins. It was hardly checked by the murder of Marat by Charlotte Corday in July. Among its prominent victims were the queen and Madame Roland. The latter as she passed to the scaffold uttered the memorable words, "O liberty, what crimes are committed in thy name!" Nor was the Duke of Orleans—best known by his nickname of Philippe Égalité—saved from death by the vote that had helped to send his kinsman, the king, to the guillotine.

The Terror was now at its height. Danton was executed because of his supposed leanings towards mercy. For a brief period Robespierre was left supreme. In six weeks 1400 persons are said to have perished in Paris alone. In protecting France against her external foes, and in suppressing civil war in various parts of the country, the committee had been vigorous and successful. Now that these anxieties had been removed, a reaction against its

cruelty followed. Some members of the Convention, headed by Tallien, plucked up courage and accused Robespierre. In the struggle that ensued Robespierre was worsted in spite of the support of the Commune of Paris. On the 9th Thermidor (July 27)¹ he was imprisoned in the Conciergerie, where so many of his victims had passed the last night of their lives. On the 10th he was carried, half dead from the wounds he had received on the previous day, to the Place de la République, where he was guillotined with many of his followers. A sigh of relief went up from Paris.

The Convention carried on the government for a year and then began to frame a new constitution, generally known as the Directory. It established two chambers—the first, the Council of Five Hundred, to initiate, the second, the Council of Ancients, to approve—and entrusted the executive to five directors to be nominated by the first and approved by the second chamber. The reaction against Robespierre

¹ When royalty was abolished on September 21, 1792, it was decided that a new era should begin. The year was divided into twelve months of thirty days, each month being divided into decades, so that each tenth day might be a day of rest. The five days over at the end of the year to make up 365 were called *sansculottides* and formed a festival. Names were given to the months from their supposed characters. *Vendémiaire*, the month of vintage, began on September 21, and was followed at intervals of thirty days by *Brumaire* (fog), *Frimaire* (sleet), *Nivôse* (snow), *Pluviôse* (rain), *Ventôse* (wind), *Germinal* (sprouting), *Floréal* (flower), *Prairial* (pasture), *Messidor* (harvest), *Thermidor* (heat), *Fructidor* (fruit).

and the extreme Republicans had, however, gone even farther than this, and there was a strong party in Paris who thought that this was an occasion for restoring the monarchy. The agitation that followed gave Napoleon his opportunity.

It was in June 1793 that he had landed in France with his family. In September of the same year he was appointed to take the place of Donmartin, who had been wounded when in command of the artillery at Toulon, at that time held by the English. The part played by him in the siege of Toulon has probably been exaggerated, but he more than justified the confidence placed in him by Salicetti and the revolutionary leaders, to whose party he had definitely attached himself. His success gave him promotion, and with it the encouragement he needed. He had been in the army eight years and three months; more than half of this time he had spent away from his duties, some of it without leave. At the age of twenty-five, after three years and five months actual service, Buonaparte was a general of brigade. In this capacity he joined the army of Italy. Before long, however, the fall of Robespierre jeopardised the safety of his protégé. Napoleon was arrested, but, luckily for him, set at liberty without being brought to Paris, where so many of Robespierre's supporters perished after the 9th Thermidor. There can be no doubt that he obtained his liberty on this occasion by denying Robespierre, just as he had previously denied Paoli.

After taking part in a disastrous expedition to recover Corsica from the English, he was summoned to Paris in the spring of 1795. When the number of artillery officers was reduced, Napoleon, who was, by reason of his age, at the bottom of the list of generals of brigade, was degraded to the infantry and ordered to serve in the Western army. This was a cruel disappointment to him, as in the infantry the generals of brigade did not enjoy the same powers of initiation as those of the artillery. By genuine or feigned illness Napoleon obtained permission to remain in Paris, and his intrigues there were nearly successful, when, on September 15, 1795, a decree of the Committee of Public Safety erased his name from the list of general officers "attendu son refus de se rendre au poste qui lui a été assigné."

But his opportunity soon came. On August 22 the Convention had voted the Constitution of the year III. The Royalists, as has been said, were naturally unfavourable to this new form of government (see page xxxi.), but it was even more hotly opposed by the extreme Republicans. The National Guard backed up the discontented, and the government in alarm gave the command of Paris to Barras, who, knowing Napoleon's worth, appointed him his second in command. Measures were hastily taken on the 13th Vendémiaire (Oct. 5, 1795), when 30,000 National Guards marched against the 8000 men whom the Convention had been able to collect. In

command of these latter was Napoleon. The revolting National Guards were driven back, unable to stand against the shot which Napoleon's artillery poured into their dense ranks. The struggle that had begun at four in the afternoon was over almost as soon as the autumn day. On the morrow Paris was quiet again. Henceforward the forces, roused by the Revolution, were to be guided by the sword rather than the guillotine. The sword was in Napoleon's hand. All the odium caused by the shedding of French blood in the streets of Paris fell upon Barras. Napoleon gained his reward in the shape of the command of the army of the interior. A few months later he married Joséphine Beauharnais, the handsome widow of a noble who, after commanding the army on the Rhine, had met death on the guillotine in 1794.

On the eve of his marriage the Directory appointed him to the command of the army of Italy. A few days later he left his wife and Paris for Marseilles and Italy, where at last he was to have an opportunity of showing to the eyes of Europe his rare military ability.

Until now France had been defending herself against Europe. In 1796 the war of liberation had become a war of conquest. By land Austria was France's most formidable opponent, and it was against Austria that the Italian campaign was undertaken.

Opposed to the French army of 35,000 were the

combined armies of Austria and Piedmont amounting to 60,000 men. Napoleon's idea was to separate these two forces. To inspire his troops for the task he addressed them in these words: "Je vais vous conduire dans les plus fertiles plaines du monde; vous y trouverez de grandes villes et de riches provinces, vous y trouverez honneur, gloire et butin." Not very different from Hannibal's speech, when, on the summit of the Alps, he roused his weary soldiers to the conquest of Italy by pointing out the rich plain of Lombardy at their feet.

Like Hannibal, too, Napoleon was at once successful. After defeating the Sardinians three times, he made a treaty with them near Turin, by which he secured his communications with France. Freed from one enemy, he was able to pay his whole attention to the other. At Lodi, where Masséna drove back 12,000 Austrians who were guarding the bridge, Napoleon entered on his career of conquest. "Après Lodi je me regardai pour la première fois non comme un simple général, mais comme un homme appelé à influencer sur le sort du peuple. Je me vis dans l'histoire." From this time, too, he wrote his name Bonaparte, as if, by the suppression of the "u," which gave it an Italian appearance, he declared himself henceforward at heart, as he was by profession, a Frenchman.

Pavia, Cremona, Milan fell into his hands, all glad to be free from the yoke of Austria. A few days, however, of French occupation changed the attitude

of the people, who had to provide vast sums to satisfy the needs and the luxury of their liberators. Mantua gave Napoleon more trouble, mainly owing to a diversion occasioned by the arrival of Wurmser with 40,000 men from the army of the Rhine. This check, as all others, was only temporary. Before a year was over the victories of Arcola and Rivoli, the capitulation of Mantua, the surrender of Wurmser with the 13,000 men that remained to him, marked further stages in the victorious career of "Le petit Caporal." All these successes, in which 60,000 French soldiers had defeated nearly 200,000 Austrians, were mainly due to the splendid genius of the leader. After making peace with the Pope, who gave up Avignon amongst other places to France, he turned his steps towards Vienna. The barrier of the Alps was soon overcome. All other obstacles were surmounted, and on April 7, 1797 Masséna was within sight of the spires of Vienna. The Austrians, in dismay, asked for a truce. This was granted, and before long Napoleon, without any authorisation, signed the preliminaries of a peace at Leoben.

Meantime events in Paris were forwarding Napoleon's ultimate supremacy. The Directory ruled in a half-hearted manner. This gave the Royalists and wealthy classes heart to plot a revolt, which was only stopped by the armed intervention of Augereau, whom Napoleon had sent for the purpose to Paris. On 18th Fructidor (Sep. 4, 1797)

the leaders of the opposition were expelled and thrown into prison. Another step had been taken towards making Napoleon master of France.

The result of the Italian war is to be seen in the treaty of Campo Formio (Oct. 1797), which gave France the Austrian Netherlands now called Belgium, the left bank of the Rhine, and the Ionian Islands; Austria was compensated by Istria, Dalmatia, and the troublesome republic of Venice, whose ancient independence had recently been destroyed by Napoleon: whilst the conquered districts in the north of Italy were formed into the Cisalpine Republic.

Napoleon on his return to Paris was received with enthusiasm and rewarded by the command of the Army of the Interior. For a time he pretended to be occupied with plans for the invasion of England, but in reality his eyes were turned towards the East. Perhaps jealousy, perhaps fear, helped to induce the Directory to meet his wishes, and on April 12, 1798 he was appointed Commander-in-Chief of the Army in Egypt. To Napoleon Egypt was only a stepping-stone to India, where he hoped to deal a deadly blow to the rising power of England.

The expedition, including an army of 36,000 men, the pick of his generals, artists, engineers, geographers, printers, even labourers, to exploit the country which he already looked upon as conquered, set sail from Toulon in May 1798. On his way Malta was surrendered to him by the

knights of St. John. At the beginning of June he landed near Alexandria, having luckily missed Nelson, who had been sent to intercept the expedition in the Mediterranean. Alexandria fell, and Napoleon commenced his march across the desert to Cairo. Egypt at this time belonged nominally to Turkey, in reality two Beys—Ibrahim and Mourad—were masters of the country, treating, by the help of their Mameluke army, the fellahen or Arab labourers like slaves. Within sight of Cairo, and under the shadow of the Pyramids, a battle was fought, which would have ended in a massacre had not the Mamelukes sought safety in flight. In the midst of the rejoicings for this victory the news of a great disaster reached Napoleon. Nelson, in Aboukir Bay, had utterly destroyed the French fleet under Brueys. This necessitated spending the winter in Egypt. Before spring Napoleon made his way across the desert to Syria. It was on this journey that he visited the Isthmus of Suez and saw the traces of a canal which joined the Mediterranean and the Red Sea. Want of time alone prevented Napoleon beginning the work which was to make the name of De Lesseps famous.

Through Syria he made his way to Jaffa, which he took and pillaged, and here it was that he butchered 1200 Turkish prisoners whom it was inconvenient to feed. At Acre he received a check. The 6000 Turks who held the town were assisted by the English squadron of Sir Sidney Smith and

inspired by the genius of that commander. For sixty days the attacks were renewed, but all in vain. The plague came to the help of the heroic defenders, and at last Napoleon had to retire, worsted for the first time. It was with good reason that he said of Sir Sidney Smith, "That man made me miss my destiny."

On his return to Egypt a last effort of the Turks resulted in their defeat at Aboukir. News, however, soon came from France which made him resolve to return at once. Without any thought for the remnant of the army, which he had brought to Egypt and was now leaving there, cut off, owing to the command of the sea being in the hands of the English, from all hope of return, he left Rosetta on August 22. On October 16 he reached Paris. France was hard pressed by Russia, England, and Austria. Her armies, continually robbed by him of nearly all their best commanders, were powerless against such foes. Civil discord, too, aggravated the perils of the situation. The Directory had to bear the discredit of the failure of the army. After the elections Barras alone retained a shadow of power. Sieyès, now one of his colleagues, set to work to tinker the Constitution once more. The ex-abbé was not slow to see that Napoleon must be reckoned with, and not the less because of his failure in Egypt. Only a few others were admitted to the plot, and on the 18th Brumaire (Nov. 10) the Council of the Five Hundred were summoned.

Lucien Bonaparte, their president, immediately read a decree adjourning the sitting to St. Cloud on the ground of a Jacobin plot. When they met the next day they were hostile to any change in the Constitution. But force was to do what fraud had failed in. The deputies were expelled from the room by grenadiers, and the Council was dissolved "au nom du général Bonaparte." All show of legality was, however, not yet abandoned. That night a handful of deputies sat once more under the presidency of Lucien and issued a decree abolishing the Directory, expelling sixty-one of the Five Hundred, and establishing a provisional government of three consuls. These were Bonaparte, Sieyès, and Roger Ducos. Before the rump adjourned, the three conspirators came in and took the oaths of allegiance to the Republic. The first *coup d'état* had succeeded. Within six weeks the new Constitution was promulgated. The executive was to be in the hands of three consuls elected for ten years. Of these the first consul was to nominate ministers, officers, judges; the other two had little power. The laws were to be prepared by a *conseil d'état*, to be discussed by a tribunate of a hundred members, and then accepted or negatived by a legislative body without discussion, but after having been reported on by three orators from the government and the tribunate. The senate of eighty members, appointed by the consuls for life, was to decide whether acts were constitutional, and was to elect

the other bodies. The practical result of this change was to abolish the Republic, and to give all the power to the daring soldier who was chosen First Consul.

France had been suffering all through the century from a terrible disease. To cure it a terrible remedy had been almost necessary. Now that the unhappy country, exhausted as much by the remedy as by the disease, lay helpless, some irresistible power was needed to galvanise the patient into life. The Revolution had destroyed the corrosive influence of a corrupt monarchy, but it left France weak and divided, needing to be strengthened and united by the bracing influence of the great Corsican, yet doomed, like him, to over-reach her strength when "the meteor of conquest allured her too far."

Napoleon's first act in his new office was to endeavour to make peace with Europe. Austria and England alone held out. The former had two vast armies, one on the Rhine opposed to Moreau, one in Italy where she had gradually recovered much of the ground lost by the treaty of Campo Formio. Napoleon, either because he was anxious that Moreau, his only serious rival, should not eclipse his glory, or for more creditable reasons, determined on a second Italian campaign. With 40,000 troops he crossed the great St. Bernard, whilst by other passes other armies made their way. At first he did little. Masséna was hard pressed at Genoa. Lannes won a costly victory at Montebello over the Austrian

Melas. But on June 14, 1800, the armies met on the plains of Marengo, a few miles from Alessandria. At ten in the morning the Austrians were winning, when Napoleon came up with the guard and some reinforcements. Still nothing could check the victorious advance of the enemy. At three in the afternoon the French army had been nearly cut in two. Melas, the Austrian leader, confident of victory, had left the field to rest. Suddenly the fortune of the day changed. Desaix, who had come down into the plains, made a furious charge, which was continued by Kellerman's cavalry. In an hour the Austrians had been driven headlong over the Bormida, and defeat had been turned into victory. An armistice was signed at Alessandria, but no definite peace could be made as Austria refused to abandon England and English subsidies.

Before long, however, a series of defeats nearer home, culminating in the catastrophe of Hohenlinden (Dec. 3), and the appearance of Moreau at the gates of Vienna, led to a further armistice. On February 9, 1801, peace was signed at Lunéville on terms nearly identical with those of Campo Formio.

England was now left alone. Henceforward Napoleon's one object was to crush her, but there were difficulties in his way. The Northern Confederacy had been broken up by the English victory at Copenhagen and the assassination of the Czar Paul. The final evacuation of Egypt by the French—an evacuation which took place by the help of

English vessels—served to strengthen England. Preliminaries for peace were agreed upon in London in October 1801, and on March 25, 1802, a definite treaty was signed at Amiens. England restored to France and her allies all their colonies except Trinidad and Ceylon. Egypt was to be given back to Turkey, Malta to the knights of St. John. Portugal, the two Sicilies, and the papal states were to be evacuated by France.

The next few months were employed by Napoleon in carrying out internal reforms and strengthening his position as the real head of the State. The *Concordat*, which still regulates the Church in France, had been made with the Pope in July 1801. By this the Church, which had been destroyed, along with all public religion, at the time of the Revolution, was restored within certain limits, but made to a considerable extent subservient to the civil power¹

It is from this period that the institutions of modern France date. The Code Napoléon—a systematic digest of the national law and the most enduring monument to its author's greatness—received its form at this time. The Legion of

¹ Ten archbishoprics and fifty bishoprics were created to which the First Consul was to nominate, the Pope to institute. All other patronage was to be in the hands of bishops subject to the approval of the government. The Pope gave up all claims to Church property confiscated at the time of the Revolution. In return, the government undertook to maintain the clergy of all ranks.

Honour was established as a means of rewarding signal service to the state in any department of activity. In the same way the University, the Bank of France, and the system of Local Government were originated or reorganised.

In 1802 the consulship for life was granted Napoleon. At the same time he obtained the right to choose a successor. He was, in fact, a king in everything but name.

In 1803 war broke out again. The conditions of the treaty of Amiens had never been loyally carried out. The English had not evacuated Malta. On the other hand, Piedmont had been incorporated in France, the independence of Switzerland had been infringed, and French troops still remained in Italy. A heated discussion between Napoleon and the British ambassador at Paris led to an open rupture.

Napoleon's scheme was to invade England. Vast preparations were made, but the scheme failed, and was bound to fail, as long as England remained mistress of the sea. In the meantime a plot was made against Napoleon's person, if not his life, by some French emigrants in England. The plot was discovered and its leaders executed. Even Moreau, against whom there was no evidence, was exiled. Among those accused, without any reason, of being concerned in the plot was the Bourbon Duc d'Enghien—the last descendant of the great Condé. He was arrested, or rather seized,

in his castle in Baden a few miles from the French frontier, and after two days' incarceration at Strasbourg brought to Paris, tried by an illegal commission, sentenced to death, and shot by the side of the grave that had been dug to receive his corpse even before his trial began. Of his innocence there can be little doubt; of his guilt there was certainly not the slightest proof. Even Napoleon's keenest advocates have been unable to excuse this crime. To counteract the plot against his life, and perhaps to counteract the feeling which Napoleon's injustice must have aroused in many minds, a movement was started by Fouché which resulted in Napoleon being made Emperor. He was crowned by the Pope (Pius VII.), whom he had summoned from Rome, in the church of Notre-Dame, and shortly afterwards at Milan he had himself crowned king of Italy with the iron crown of the Lombard kings.

It was now more than ever necessary to justify his position by a successful war. The invasion of England had to be postponed, as Villeneuve, after escaping from Toulon and enticing Nelson to the West Indies, had been shut up in Cadiz and Ferrol, and was unable to co-operate with the land-forces collected in such numbers near Boulogne.

Napoleon next turned his attention to Austria, which was once more allied with England and Russia against what Europe recognised as the common foe.

The campaign that followed is not easy to

describe. Napoleon's idea was to surround the Austrians in Swabia. After being defeated in a series of engagements, the main body, under Mack, was compelled to surrender at Ulm. In November Napoleon occupied Vienna, which the Austrians, though supported by a Russian army, hardly attempted to defend. These successes may have partly consoled Napoleon for the defeat of Villeneuve and destruction of his fleet by Nelson at Trafalgar. This news was brought to him in Moravia. He hardly flinched, but continued his march towards Olmutz, where 80,000 Russians were stationed with about 15,000 Austrians. Napoleon encouraged these in their hope of cutting off his retreat to Vienna, until he had enticed them into a position where he had them at his mercy. On December 2 was fought the battle of Austerlitz. The Russian army was cut in two by a charge of Lannes and Bernadotte on the castle of Austerlitz. Napoleon himself fell on the divisions sent to cut off his retreat. The whole allied army was soon in flight. Many attempted to cross the frozen river. Napoleon broke the ice with his artillery, and the fugitives met a horrible death in the icy waters of the Telnitz. The main body retreated towards Hungary. On the following day the Emperor Francis, with all the pride of Austria, came humbly to Napoleon's tent to sue for an armistice. This was granted, and peace was signed at Pressburg on December 26. Austria had to surrender Venice to

Napoleon's kingdom of Italy, Istria and Dalmatia directly to Napoleon, the Tyrol and Vorarlberg to Bavaria, and to recognise the electors of Bavaria and Wurttemberg as kings. Napoleon was enabled to set up his brother Joseph as king of Naples, to change the Batavian Republic into a monarchy for his brother Louis, and to form the confederacy¹ of the Rhine out of the states between that river and the Upper Danube. Austria, in fact, lost a fifth of her territory. The successor of Charlemagne was stripped of the old Germanic Empire by the Corsican adventurer. The Holy Roman Empire ceased to exist even in name.

War was soon to break out again. Prussia had been temporarily pacified by the gift of Hanover, which was not Napoleon's to give. When news reached Berlin that Napoleon was prepared to restore it to England as the price of peace, when Prussia realised that the confederacy of the Rhine was really a blow at her power, preparations were rapidly made. It was amid a great burst of patriotic feeling that the armies, under Brunswick and Hohenlohe, crossed the Elbe. Napoleon hurried from Paris to take the command of his troops. The campaign was short. After a few disastrous skirmishes the

¹ The members of this confederacy—the kings of Bavaria and Wurttemberg, the Elector of Baden, and thirteen minor princes—became for all purposes of foreign policy subjects of France, and completely severed themselves from the ancient Germanic body, as members of which they had enjoyed little or no political life.

army, under Hohenlohe, was completely defeated on the plateau of Jena by Napoleon's men, whilst at Auerstadt, Davoût won almost as complete a victory over Brunswick, who was killed early in the fight. Seventy thousand Prussians were slain or captured. The king, Frederick William, fled to Königsberg, as Napoleon captured one after another the towns of Prussia. On October 24 he was at Potsdam, where he rested some days at the castle of Sans Souci. After visiting the tomb of Frederick the Great he entered Berlin in triumph. Now it was that he issued his famous Berlin decrees against England. These attempted to shut all the ports of the Continent against English ships, to interdict all trade and intercourse with England, to confiscate all property belonging to British subjects.

From Berlin, Napoleon advanced into Prussian Poland, where he was welcomed as a deliverer. The campaign against Russia in Poland, in which Napoleon was always harassed by the difficulties of obtaining supplies in a country almost devoid of the means of communication, involved Napoleon in the battle of Eylau (February 1807), in which the French were checked after great slaughter. This repulse was wiped out in June by the victory of Friedland, which decided the campaign. Both emperors were now weary of the war, and in a historic meeting on a raft in the middle of the river Niemen, terms of peace were settled. Treaties were signed at Tilsit between France and Russia, and

France and Prussia. The kingdom of Westphalia was formed for Jérôme Bonaparte, Napoleon's youngest brother, out of the king of Prussia's territory between the Rhine and the Elbe. The Czar recognised the Napoleonic states in Germany, Holland, and Italy. The Grand Duchy of Warsaw was taken from Prussia and given to the Elector of Saxony, who was at the same time promoted to be a king. Denmark, Sweden, and Portugal were to be enrolled in the alliance, and Austria was to be compelled to adopt the "continental system." The most important part of the treaty was, however, perhaps the secret articles by which the Czar agreed to help Napoleon against England if that country did not acquiesce in the French terms before December.

The peace of Tilsit is the high-water mark of Napoleon's power. It had ebbed and flowed many times since he had landed from Corsica in 1793, but it had been always gaining fresh ground. Now there was no one to dispute his absolute supremacy on the Continent. In his own country the enthusiasm for his conquests had not yet been damped by any calculation as to their terrible cost. Taking advantage of this enthusiasm he was able to destroy the last vestiges of legislative independence by abolishing the tribunate (see p. xxxix.), and to give a death-blow to the freedom of the press by establishing a rigorous censorship. On August 8, just one month after the peace of Tilsit, the English

once more attacked Copenhagen, and by the destruction of the Danish fleet and dockyards anticipated Napoleon in his determination to compel the Danes to use both against England. Foiled in his plan he turned his attention towards Portugal, which had hitherto disregarded the Berlin decrees. Not satisfied with depriving it of its advantages as a neutral, he sent Junot with an army to Lisbon. In order to conduct military operations in Portugal with any degree of safety, it was necessary for Napoleon to have a firm footing in Spain. Charles IV, a feeble trifler, was now king of Spain. Unable to restrain his wife, his son, or his people, he quarrelled with all three. These domestic differences gave Napoleon his chance of interfering nominally as a mediator, really as a conqueror. After intriguing with Manuel Godoy, the queen's favourite, and the actual ruler of the country, Napoleon threw off the mask and took possession of the northern provinces of Spain. Charles, in his terror, abdicated in favour of his son Ferdinand, and Napoleon, in order to restore appearances, invited both father and son to a conference at Bayonne. The result of this was that Joseph Bonaparte was put upon the throne of Spain. But the Spanish people, whom Napoleon had not reckoned with, rose with one accord at this degradation. It was not until he had crossed the Pyrenees himself that the rising was checked, and then only for a time, for England saw her opportunity and realised that the Peninsula was a convenient battle-field. During

the next five years the "Spanish ulcer" was a continuous drain on the Emperor's resources. Arthur Wellesley landed in Portugal on August 1, 1808, and in that same month he defeated Junot at Vimiera and compelled him to sign the Convention of Cintra, by which he agreed to withdraw the French army from Portuguese territory.

But it was not only in Spain that trouble arose. A national spirit was rising too in Germany. The songs of Arndt, the poetry of Körner and Schiller, the philosophy of Fichte, the abolition of serfage, the statesmanship of Stein, perhaps too the victories of Napoleon, contributed to the resurrection of German patriotism. The breath of this new life was wafted to Napoleon. In the midst of the operations in the Peninsula he hurried back to Central Europe to make sure of the Czar's support. At an interview at Erfurth a fresh treaty was made, by which, in return for the recognition of Joseph as king of Spain, Napoleon ceded Moldavia and Wallachia to Russia. On his return to Spain, the victories of Burgos, Espinosa, and Tudela opened the way to Madrid, which surrendered on December 4. From here he started with Soult to drive the English, who, unaware of the fall of Madrid, were advancing on Valladolid under Moore, into the sea. Hearing of Napoleon's intentions Moore began his famous retreat to Corunna, destroying all bridges in his wake. The Emperor, feeling for once powerless, left the

pursuit to Soult and Ney, who did not overtake the English until they had reached Corunna. There, in a battle, Moore was slain, but his troops embarked without heavy loss. Satisfied with the apparent success of his Spanish campaign, Napoleon recrossed the Pyrenees in January, leaving the war in the Peninsula to the guidance of his generals. Great soldiers though Soult, Masséna, and Marmont were, they found their match in Arthur Wellesley.

For some time Austria had been making preparations for a renewal of the struggle. The seizure of a French messenger from the embassy at Vienna by the Austrians precipitated the conflict. Napoleon hurried to Bavaria, which the Archduke Charles had invaded on April 9. After a victory at Eckmühl, within a month of the outbreak of hostilities, the French troops entered Vienna. Outside the city the Archduke Charles with an army of 80,000 men was still to be reckoned with. A bloody and indecisive struggle, which cost the French the heroic Lannes, took place in May at Aspern and Essling, where Napoleon tried in vain to advance across the Danube. Six weeks later the object was attained when the French drove the Austrians from the heights of Wagram at a terrible cost of life. This, combined with the failure of Lord Chatham's expedition to Antwerp, and Wellington's slow progress in Spain, induced Austria to consent to the Peace of Vienna. By this treaty, the last signed by Napoleon as a conqueror, Bavaria and Saxony were

enriched at the expense of Austria, and the country between the Adriatic and the Save was added to Napoleon's empire, which now extended to the borders of Turkey and cut Austria off from all communication with the Mediterranean. This was an opportunity, too, for carrying out a long-hoped-for project of alliance with some royal European house. Joséphine was divorced in 1809, and early next year Napoleon married the Archduchess Marie Louise of Austria, daughter of Francis I., whom he had just conquered, and niece of Marie Antoinette, whom the French people had sent to the guillotine. Within a year a son was born, on whom the title of king of Rome was conferred by Napoleon; for he had annexed Rome and all the papal dominions to the kingdom of Italy in 1809, when, as an answer to his excommunication, he had carried Pius VII. off to captivity at Fontainebleau.

Though fortune smiled on him in giving him an imperial bride and an heir, troubles were at hand. Within France discontent could hardly find a vent. The so-called representative bodies had been gradually stripped of their powers. Legislative and executive acts now depended on the decrees which simply registered the will of the Emperor. The destruction of the freedom of the press had removed the only other means a nation has of expressing its aspirations or complaints. But outside France the public had no need to disguise its feelings.

Even his own relatives or nominees became restive. His brother Louis abdicated the throne of Holland to escape being deposed, Lucien left Italy for America, Jérôme had to be reprimanded in Westphalia. Russia openly, many countries secretly, disregarded the enormous, almost prohibitive, duties placed on English goods. In the Peninsula, though the Spaniards, it is true, were continually being defeated by the French under Soult, Wellington, by the lines of Torres Vedras, thwarted all Masséna's attempts to capture Lisbon, and eventually compelled him to retreat into Spain. Napoleon ought, no doubt, to have gone himself to the Peninsula; he did not, perhaps he feared defeat, more probably another scheme was already occupying his mind. This scheme was the expedition to Russia, with the idea of making Moscow a stepping-stone to the East. The alliance of Tilsit, weakened by the Austrian marriage and by the Czar's refusal to carry out Napoleon's policy against neutrals, could no longer bear the terrible strain put upon it by the "continental system." War was declared with Russia in March 1812. On June 23 the grand army of more than half a million men began to cross the Niemen. The march to Moscow was almost unopposed. At times attempts were made to come to terms, but the Czar refused to treat as long as any of his territory was in possession of the enemy. The Russians made only half-hearted attempts to stop the advance; but they did what

was more effective, they destroyed the crops and the towns as they retreated. At Borodino, within seventy miles of Moscow, the first important battle was fought. After a terrible slaughter on both sides the French remained in possession of the field, but were not able to pursue and rout the Russians under Kutuzof, who retreated in good order and did not stay even to protect Moscow. This the French occupied without another blow being struck in its defence on September 15. The next day the fires, that were to devastate that splendid city, broke out. When they were extinguished, after five days, Napoleon tried to restore order and save from pillage the provisions and wealth that the flames had spared. In vain he waited for proposals of peace from the Czar; in vain he made overtures himself. Had it not been for his rooted belief that his occupation of the town must cause Russia to sue for peace, he might have retreated in safety and left Russian territory before the Czar had had time to reorganise his army, or the cruel winter to impede his retreat.

It was not until October 19 that the French army started on what from its dramatic incidents is looked upon as the irretrievable disaster of the Emperor's life. No serious attempts were made by the Russians to stop the retreating foe. Had their generals been more determined, not even the heroic efforts of Delzons, Davoût, and Ney could have saved the remnants of the great army.

The road to Kaloriga, which Napoleon had intended to take, was blocked by the Russians. Instead of fighting for it the Emperor turned aside, and at Borodino had to tread again the weary devastated way along which his army had advanced in fullest hope but a few short months before. For a moment it looked as if the inability to cross the Beresina, a tributary of the Dnieper, would involve the destruction of the remnants of the army, but just in time a ford was found where bridges could be made. When the army was half across, the Russians opened fire on the congested mass of men, women, and children. For a time they were driven back, but before the whole army was over, Napoleon, with his usual reckless disregard of life, gave orders for the bridges to be destroyed, and when this was done more than 6000 were left to perish on the wrong side of the river. A little farther on Napoleon suddenly left his army in the lurch and hurried back towards Paris. Murat was left in command. He could do little. The retreat soon became a rout aggravated by a Russian attack at Vilna. About the middle of December the remnants crossed the Niemen. Of the 533,000 who had crossed it six months before, 100,000 remained as prisoners in the hands of the Russians, and about 300,000 had perished in battle, of cold, or of hunger.

But this expedition meant much more to Napoleon than the loss of 300,000 soldiers. It

meant the loss of his prestige. He had been worsted. Failure was not due to Russian valour, to the Russian winter, or to any shortcomings on the part of his own generals and soldiers. Recklessly confident of success, he himself had made no preparations for retreat. The Russians had wisely given him no opportunity of showing his genius as a commander on the field of battle. The Prussians, though nominally his allies, had refused to help him in his need.

The wreck of the French army under Napoleon's stepson, Prince Eugène Beauharnais, gathered at Leipzig. Meanwhile Napoleon had reached Paris, and he began at once to collect a fresh army, with which he joined Eugène's force at the end of April 1813. In the campaign which followed he was never decisively successful. It is true that the Prussians, now openly in alliance with Russia, were driven back at Lutzen and Bautzen, and Dresden was occupied. Those successes were counterbalanced by the final failure of his armies in Spain. After being victorious at Salámanca (1812), Wellington had retreated again to Portugal, only to issue forth in 1813 when he defeated Joseph at Vittoria. From there the French were driven back to the Bidasoa; Valencia and Barcelona were evacuated. The Peninsula was free. In the summer attempts were made to negotiate, but these were rendered abortive by the hesitations of Napoleon and the duplicity of

Austria. By the middle of August, when the armistice expired, Napoleon had not strengthened his position, whilst Austria had joined the allies. The theatre of war was to be Bohemia and the Elbe. There were three distinct forces to be coped with—the first the Austrians under Schwartzenberg in Bohemia, the second under Blücher in Silesia, the third in the north to cover Berlin under the Crown Prince of Sweden, the Frenchman Bernadotte. Their tactics were to retreat before Napoleon, but to accept battle with his lieutenants. At Dresden, Napoleon was completely successful over the Austrians. The victory was, however, annulled by the complete destruction of the force he sent in pursuit of the fugitives. Oudinot, Macdonald, Ney were all in their turn defeated, and the allies were threatening to bar the way to France. To break the barrier thus rapidly forming round him Napoleon concentrated his forces at Leipzig, and there, on October 13, began the final struggle. The Prussians, Russians, and Austrians outnumbered the French, but even so Napoleon might have retreated early in the contest. He refused, and it was not until the night of the 18th that the defile began through the streets of Leipzig. On the 19th the allies attacked the rear. Long before all the French troops had left the town, the bridge over the Elster was prematurely blown up, and 20,000 were captured, or perished, on the banks, or in the waters of the river.

At Hanau Napoleon had to drive back the Bavarians, now turned against him, who were barring his way to Frankfort. At Mainz he crossed the Rhine with what was left of the French army. The campaign had ended in complete disaster. Europe had been defied and had conquered her defier.

Even now Napoleon might have avoided absolute shipwreck. Peace was proposed on the basis of allowing France almost all she had gained by the First Revolutionary War, but Napoleon cared more for his personal pride, humbled by the failures in Russia and at Leipzig, than for his adopted country, and the terms were never accepted. The end, however, was at hand. The patience of France was well-nigh exhausted. In less than ten years two million men had been levied; nearly all had been sacrificed to the insatiable ambition of one man. The enthusiasm which had been felt for him when a conqueror was now succeeded by the hatred of those who, in the hour of his defeat, only regarded him as the man who had exhausted the life-blood of the nation, and inflicted on it a bitter humiliation.

The allies were proportionately elated. Wellington crossed the Pyrenees. Schwartzberg entered France between the Jura and Belfort, Blücher crossed the Meuse without resistance, the northern army passed through Holland. On all sides France was invaded, and by armies and generals to whom Napoleon had in many cases taught the art of war.

Leaving Paris, Napoleon was for a time successful in preventing Blücher from joining Schwartzberg. Negotiations were opened at Châtillon-sur-Seine. The allies insisted on confining France to her boundaries of 1791, and excluding her from all future European arrangements. Meanwhile Napoleon's hopes had been raised by successes against Schwartzberg, and he haughtily refused the terms proposed. Once again the tide of the invaders advanced, reinforced by Bülow and Wintzingerode. Together the Prussians and Austrians marched on Paris. At Arcis-sur-Aube Napoleon, meeting overwhelming numbers, had to retreat towards Lorraine, where he hoped to create a diversion. The allies, however, marched on to Paris. The Empress and Court had fled to Blois. Joseph was in command of the city, with only 30,000 men to defend it against the 170,000 allies. A battle was fought outside the walls; of the result there was never any doubt, and Paris capitulated. On March 31 the allies entered. They refused to treat any longer with Napoleon. Under the inspiration of Talleyrand, a provisional government adopted a new Constitution which called the brother of Louis XVI. to the throne under the name of Louis XVIII. Napoleon was helpless, deserted by his marshals, by his statesmen, by his people; he could not even obtain the throne for his son—the grandson of one of his conquerors. Early in April he signed the treaty of abdication at Fontainebleau,

at the same table on which, not long before, the prisoner Pope (Pius VII.) had leant his trembling hand.

For less than a year that treaty was kept by Napoleon. Many excuses can be offered for his breaking it. The allies had not done their part; the income promised had not been paid him; his wife and his son had been kept away from him; a plan for removing him still farther away had been openly discussed. But these are only excuses. The open discontent in France under the new dispensation was, in the same way, only a secondary cause of his return. The real cause was that the illness, which was so soon to unnerve him, had not begun to make itself felt, that he was only forty-five years old, and lastly that he was Napoleon.

NAPOLÉON

I

NAPOLÉON A L'ÎLE D'ELBE

NAPOLÉON était roi de l'île d'Elbe.*

En perdant l'empire du monde, il avait voulu, d'abord, ne rien conserver que son malheur.

— Un petit écu* par jour et un cheval, avait-il dit ; voilà tout ce qui m'est nécessaire. 5

Aussi, forcé par les instances de ceux qui l'entouraient, lorsqu'il pouvait prendre l'Italie, la Toscane, la Corse, avait-il jeté les yeux sur le petit coin de terre où nous le retrouvons.

Ce fut* le 3 mai 1814, à six heures du soir, que 10 la frégate *the Undaunted* mouilla* dans la rade de Porto-Ferraio.*

Le soir même,* toutes les autorités, le clergé et les principaux habitants se rendirent d'eux-mêmes en députation à bord de la frégate, et furent admis 15 en présence de l'empereur.

* Words with an asterisk are explained in the Notes.

Le lendemain 4, au matin, un détachement de troupes porta dans la ville le nouveau drapeau que l'empereur avait adopté, et qui était celui de l'île. Il fut aussitôt arboré sur le fort de l'Étoile, au milieu des salves d'artillerie ; la frégate anglaise le salua à son tour,* ainsi que tous les vaisseaux qui étaient dans le port.

Vers deux heures, Napoléon descendit à terre avec toute sa suite. Au moment où* il mit le pied sur le sol de l'île, il fut salué par cent un coups de canon tirés par l'artillerie des forts, et auxquels la frégate anglaise répondit par vingt-quatre coups et par les cris et les vivats de tout son équipage.

Avant d'entrer dans la ville, il fut reçu par les autorités, le clergé et les notables,* précédés du maire, qui lui présenta les clefs de Porto-Ferraio sur un plat d'argent. Les troupes de la garnison étaient sous les armes et formaient la haie ; derrière elles était entassée la population tout* entière, non seulement de la capitale, mais des autres villes et villages, qui était accourue de tous les coins de l'île. Quant à Napoléon, il était calme, affable et presque gai.

Après avoir répondu au maire, il se rendit avec son cortège à la cathédrale, où l'on chanta un *Te Deum* : puis, à la sortie de l'église, il se rendit à l'hôtel de la mairie, provisoirement destiné à lui servir de* demeure. Le soir, la ville et le port furent spontanément illuminés.

Le général Dalesme* publia, le même jour, la proclamation suivante,* rédigée par Napoléon :

“ Habitants de l’île d’Elbe, les vicissitudes humaines ont conduit au milieu de vous l’empereur Napoléon : son propre choix vous le donne pour souverain. Avant d’entrer dans vos murs, votre nouveau monarque m’a adressé les paroles suivantes, que je m’empresse de vous faire connaître, parce qu’elles sont le gage de votre bonheur* futur.

‘ Général, m’a dit l’empereur, j’ai sacrifié mes droits à l’intérêt de la patrie, et je me suis réservé 10 la souveraineté et la propriété* de l’île d’Elbe. Toutes les puissances ont consenti à cet arrangement. En faisant connaître aux habitants* cet état de choses, dites-leur que j’ai choisi cette île pour mon séjour, en considération de la douceur de leurs 15 mœurs et de leur climat, assurez-les qu’ils seront l’objet constant de mon intérêt le plus vif.’

“ Elbois, ces paroles n’ont pas besoin de commentaires ; elles formeront votre destinée. L’empereur vous a bien jugés : je vous dois cette justice, et je 20 vous la rends.

“ Habitants de l’île d’Elbe, je m’éloignerai bientôt de vous, et cet éloignement me sera pénible ; mais l’idée de votre bonheur adoucit l’amertume de mon départ, et, en quelque lieu que* je puisse être, je 25 conserverai toujours le souvenir des vertus des habitants de l’île d’Elbe.

DALESME.”

Les quatre cents grenadiers* arrivèrent le 26 mai : le 28, le général Dalesme partit avec

l'ancienne garnison. L'île était entièrement livrée à son nouveau souverain.

Napoléon ne pouvait rester longtemps inactif. Après avoir consacré les premiers jours aux travaux
5 indispensables de son installation, il monta à cheval le 18 mai et visita l'île tout entière : il voulait s'assurer par lui-même de l'état où se trouvait l'agriculture, et quels étaient les produits plus ou moins certains de l'île, comme commerce, pêche,
10 extraction de marbres et de métaux.

De retour à Portq-Ferraio, après avoir vu jusqu'au dernier village et avoir donné partout aux habitants des preuves de sa sollicitude, il s'occupa d'organiser sa cour et d'appliquer les revenus
15 publics aux plus pressants besoins

Il avait quitté l'hôtel de la mairie pour une jolie maison bourgeoise* qu'il appelait pompeusement son palais de ville. Cette maison était située sur un rocher, entre le fort Falcone et le fort de l'Étoile,
20 dans un bastion* appelé le *bastion des Moulins*. De ses fenêtres, on dominait la ville et le port, couchés à ses pieds, de sorte qu'aucun objet nouveau ne pouvait* échapper à l'œil du maître.

Quant à son palais des champs, il était situé à
25 San-Martino. Avant son arrivée, ce n'était qu'une chaumière,* qu'il avait fait reconstruire* et meubler avec goût ; au reste, l'empereur n'y couchait jamais, c'était un but* de promenade et voilà tout. Située au pied d'une montagne très élevée, côtoyée par un
30 torrent, environnée d'une prairie, elle embrassait la

ville placée en amphithéâtre devant elle, au pied de la ville le port, et à l'horizon, au delà de la surface vaporeuse de la mer, les rivages de la Toscane.

Napoléon se levait avec le jour, s'enfermait dans sa bibliothèque et travaillait à ses Mémoires* militaires jusqu'à huit heures du matin : alors il sortait pour inspecter les travaux, s'arrêtait pour interroger les ouvriers, qui presque tous étaient des soldats de sa garde* ; il faisait vers les onze heures un déjeuner 10 très frugal ; dans les grandes chaleurs, lorsqu'il avait fait de longues courses ou beaucoup travaillé, il dormait après déjeuner une heure ou deux, et ressortait habituellement sur les trois heures, soit à cheval, soit en calèche, accompagné par le grand 15 maréchal* Bertrand et par le général Drouot, qui, dans cette excursion, ne le quittaient jamais ; sur la route, il écoutait toutes les réclamations qu'on pouvait lui adresser, et ne laissait jamais personne sans l'avoir satisfait : à sept heures, il rentrait, 20 dînait avec sa sœur,* qui habitait le premier étage de son palais de ville, admettait à sa table tantôt l'intendant de l'île, M de Balbiani, tantôt le chambellan Vantini, tantôt le maire de Porto-Ferraio. Le soir, on montait chez la princesse Pauline. 25

Quoiqu'il suivit probablement de son regard d'angle les événements européens, Napoléon était, en apparence, entièrement soumis à sa fortune. Personne même ne doutait qu'avec le temps il ne s'habituaît à cette vie nouvelle, entouré comme il 30

l'était par l'amour de tous ceux qui s'approchaient de lui, lorsque les souverains alliés se chargèrent eux-mêmes de réveiller le lion, qui probablement ne dormait pas.

5 Napoléon habitait* déjà depuis plusieurs mois son petit empire, lorsqu'il fut secrètement averti que l'on venait de débattre son éloignement. La France, par l'organe de M. de Talleyrand,* réclamait à grande force, au congrès de Vienne,* cette mesure,
10 comme indispensable à sa sûreté. Elle faisait remarquer* que, s'il se lassait de son exil, l'illustre proscrit pouvait en quatre jours passer à Naples, et, de là, avec l'aide de son beau-frère Murat,* qui y régnait encore, descendre à la tête d'une armée
15 dans les provinces de la haute Italie,* déjà mécontentes, les soulever, et renouveler ainsi la lutte mortelle qui venait à peine de se terminer.

Pour appuyer cette violation du traité de Fontainebleau,* on arguait de la correspondance du
20 général Exelmans avec le roi de Naples, correspondance qui venait d'être saisie, et qui faisait soupçonner une conspiration flagrante dont le centre était à l'île d'Elbe, et dont les ramifications s'étendaient en Italie et en France. Ces soupçons
25 furent bientôt appuyés d'une autre conspiration que l'on* découvrit à Milan, et dans laquelle se trouvaient impliqués* plusieurs officiers généraux de l'ancienne armée italienne.

Cependant le congrès n'osait pas, sur des
30 preuves si faibles, prendre une détermination qui

se trouvait en contradiction manifeste avec les principes de modération si fastueusement émis par les souverains alliés : il décida que, pour n'avoir pas l'air de violer les traités existants, il serait fait des ouvertures* à Napoléon, et qu'on tâcherait de le 5 déterminer à quitter volontairement l'île d'Elbe, sauf, dans le cas où il s'y refuserait, à employer alors la violence. On s'occupa donc immédiatement du choix d'une autre résidence. Malte fut désignée ; mais l'Angleterre y vit des inconvénients : de pri- 10 sonnier, Napoléon pouvait devenir grand maître.

Elle proposa Sainte-Hélène.*

La première idée de Napoléon fut que ces bruits étaient répandus par ses ennemis eux-mêmes, afin de le porter à quelque acte de désespoir qui permit 15 de violer vis-à-vis de lui les promesses faites. En conséquence, il fit partir à l'instant même pour Vienne un agent discret, adroit et fidèle, avec mission de découvrir quelle confiance il pouvait avoir dans les avis qu'on lui avait donnés. Cet 20 agent se procura bientôt tous les renseignements nécessaires, et les fit parvenir à l'empereur. En outre, il organisa une correspondance active et sûre, à l'aide de laquelle Napoléon devait être mis au courant de tout ce qui se passerait. 25

Napoléon fit pour la France ce qu'il avait fait pour Vienne. Il envoya des émissaires munis d'instructions secrètes, pour nouer, s'il y avait lieu, des intelligences avec ceux de ses amis qui lui étaient restés dévoués et avec ceux des chefs de 30

l'armée qui, se trouvant les plus maltraités,* devaient être les plus mécontents.

Ces émissaires lui donnèrent l'assurance qu'une sourde fermentation régnait dans le peuple et dans
5 l'armée,* que tous les mécontents, et le nombre en était immense, tournaient les yeux de son côté et imploraient son retour; enfin, qu'une explosion était inévitable, et qu'il était impossible aux Bourbons
10 de lutter longtemps encore contre l'animadversion qu'avaient soulevée l'impéritie et l'imprévoyance de leur gouvernement

Il n'y avait donc plus de doute : d'un côté, le danger, de l'autre, l'espérance : une prison éternelle sur un rocher au milieu de l'Océan, ou l'empire du
15 monde

Napoléon prit sa résolution avec sa rapidité habituelle, en moins de huit jours, tout fut décidé dans son esprit. Il ne s'agissait plus que d'aviser aux préparatifs* d'une pareille entreprise sans
20 éveiller les soupçons du commissaire anglais [le colonel Campbell] chargé de venir de temps à autre* visiter l'île d'Elbe, et sous la surveillance indirecte duquel on avait placé toutes les démarches de l'empereur.

25 Il fallut aussi tromper les agents secrets qui pouvaient se trouver dans l'île, détourner l'instinctive et clairvoyante sagacité des habitants, enfin donner entièrement le change sur ses intentions.

30 A cet effet, Napoléon fit faire le tracé de

plusieurs nouvelles routes qu'il se proposait d'établir dans tous les sens, en travers et autour de l'île. Puis il s'occupa activement de faire achever sa petite maison de San-Martino, dont les travaux s'étaient ralentis, il commanda en Italie des statues et des vases,* y acheta des orangers et des plantes rares, enfin il parut y donner tous ses soins, comme à une demeure qu'il devait habiter longtemps.

Pendant ce temps, et pour donner plus de facilités encore à l'exécution de son projet, il faisait faire au brick *l'Inconstant*, qu'il s'était réservé en toute propriété, et au chebec *l'Étoile*, qu'il avait acheté, de fréquents voyages à Gênes, à Livourne, à Naples, sur les côtes de Barbarie* et même en France, afin d'habituer à leur vue les croisières anglaise et française.

Ce fut alors qu'il s'occupa sérieusement des préparatifs de son départ. Il fit porter la nuit et avec le plus grand secret, à bord de *l'Inconstant*, une grande quantité d'armes et de munitions; il fit renouveler les habits de sa garde, son linge et sa chaussure; il rappela les Polonais, qui se trouvaient détachés à Porto-Longone et dans la petite île de la Pianosa, où ils gardaient le fort; il accéléra l'organisation et l'instruction du bataillon de chasseurs, qu'il formait avec des hommes recrutés seulement en Corse et en Italie. Enfin, dans les premiers jours de février, tout se trouva prêt pour profiter de la première occasion favorable

qu'amèneraient les nouvelles que l'on attendait de France.

Ces nouvelles arrivèrent enfin : c'était un colonel de l'ancienne armée qui en était porteur.

5 Il repartit presque aussitôt pour Naples

Malheureusement, le colonel Campbell et sa frégate* étaient en ce moment dans le port. Il fallut attendre que le temps de sa station habituelle s'écoulât. Enfin, dans l'après-midi du 24 février,
10 il fit demander la permission de présenter ses hommages à l'empereur : il venait prendre congé de lui et demander ses commissions pour Livourne. Napoléon le reconduisit jusqu'à la porte, et les gens de service purent entendre ces derniers mots qu'il
15 lui adressa :

— Adieu, monsieur le colonel : je vous souhaite* un bon voyage Jusqu'au revoir.

A peine le colonel était-il* sorti que Napoléon fit demander le grand maréchal* : il passa une partie
20 de la journée et de la nuit enfermé avec lui, se coucha à trois heures du matin et se leva au point du jour.

Au premier coup d'œil qu'il jeta sur le port, il vit la frégate anglaise occupée à appareiller. Dès
25 lors, comme si une puissance magique avait enchaîné son regard à ce bâtiment, il ne le quitta plus des yeux : il lui vit déployer les unes après les autres toutes ses voiles, lever son ancre, se mettre en marche, et, par un bon vent de sud-est,
30 sortir du port et cingler* vers* Livourne.

Alors il monta sur la terrasse avec une lunette* et continua de suivre la marche du bâtiment qui s'éloignait ; vers midi, la frégate ne sembla plus qu'un point blanc sur la mer ; à une heure, elle
avait disparu tout à fait.

5

Aussitôt Napoléon donna ses ordres. Une des principales dispositions fut un embargo* de trois jours, mis sur tous les bâtiments qui se trouvaient dans le port : les plus petits bateaux furent assujettis à cette mesure, qui fut exécutée à 10 l'instant même.

Puis, comme le brick *l'Inconstant* et le chebec *l'Étoile* n'étaient pas suffisants pour le transport, on traita avec les patrons de trois ou quatre navires marchands que l'on* choisit parmi les 15 meilleurs voiliers. Le soir même, tous les marchés étaient passés, et les bâtiments à la disposition de l'empereur.

Dans la nuit du 25 au 26, c'est-à-dire du samedi au dimanche, Napoléon convoqua les 20 principales autorités et les plus notables habitants, dont il composa une espèce de conseil de régence ; puis, nommant le colonel de la garde nationale, Lapi, commandant de l'île, il confia la défense du pays à ses habitants, en leur recommandant sa 25 mère et sa sœur ; enfin, sans indiquer précisément le but de l'expédition qu'il allait tenter, il rassura d'avance ceux auxquels il s'adressait sur le succès qu'elle devait obtenir, promit, en cas de guerre, d'envoyer des secours pour défendre l'île, et leur 30

enjoignit de ne jamais la rendre à aucune puissance que sur un ordre émané de lui.

Le matin, il pourvut à quelques détails concernant sa maison, prit congé de sa famille et
5 ordonna l'embarquement

A midi, la générale⁺ battit.

A deux heures, le rappel lui^{*} succéda. Ce fut alors que Napoléon annonça lui-même à ses vieux compagnons d'armes à quelles destinées nouvelles
10 ils étaient appelés. Au nom de la France,^{*} à l'espoir d'un prochain retour dans la patrie, un cri d'enthousiasme retentit, des larmes coulèrent : les soldats rompirent leurs rangs, se jetant dans les bras les uns des autres, courant comme des insensés,
15 et se jetant à genoux devant Napoléon comme devant un dieu.

A sept heures, l'embarquement était terminé.

A huit heures, Napoléon passa du port sur un canot, quelques minutes après, il était à bord de
20 *l'Inconstant*. Au moment où il y mit le pied, un coup de canon se fit entendre : c'était le signal du départ.

Aussitôt la petite flottille appareilla, et, par un vent sud-sud-est assez frais, sortit de la rade, puis
25 du golfe, se dirigeant vers le nord-ouest et longeant à une certaine distance les côtes d'Italie.

Au moment même où elle mettait à la voile,[`] des émissaires partaient pour Naples et Milan, tandis qu'un officier supérieur se dirigeait vers la
30 Corse, afin d'y tenter un soulèvement qui pré-

paierait un refuge à l'empereur, en cas de non-succès en France.

Le 27, au point du jour, chacun monta sur le pont, pour s'assurer du chemin qu'on avait fait pendant la nuit. L'étonnement fut grand et cruel 5 lorsqu'on s'aperçut qu'on avait fait tout au plus six lieues* : à peine avait-on doublé le cap Saint-André que le vent avait molli, et qu'un calme désespérant lui avait succédé.

Lorsque le soleil eut éclairc* l'horizon, on 10 aperçut vers l'ouest, sur les côtes de la Corse, la croisière française, composée de deux frégates : *la Fleur de Lis* et *la Melpomène*.

Cette vue répandit l'alarme sur tous les bâtiments ; elle fut si grande sur le brick *l'Incon-* 15 *stant*, qui portait l'empereur, la position semblait tellement critique, le danger si imminent, que l'on commença d'agiter la question de retourner à Porto-Ferraio et d'y attendre un vent favorable. Mais l'empereur fit à l'instant même cesser 20 l'indécision, en ordonnant de continuer la route, et en promettant que le calme cesserait. En effet, comme si le vent eût été* à ses ordres, il fraîchit vers les onze heures, et, à quatre heures, on se trouva à la hauteur de Livourne. 25

Mais alors une nouvelle alarme plus sérieuse que la première se répandit par toute la flottille : on découvrit tout à coup au nord, sous le vent,* à cinq lieues environ, une frégate ; une autre apparut en même temps sur les côtes de Corse, enfin, dans 30

l'éloignement, on vit poindre un autre bâtiment de guerre qui venait vent arrière sur la flottille.

Il n'y avait plus à tergiverser, il fallait sur-le-champ prendre un parti : la nuit allait venir et
5 l'on pouvait, à la faveur de l'obscurité, échapper aux frégates, mais le bâtiment de guerre avançait toujours et l'on ne tarda point à le reconnaître pour un brick français. La première idée qui se
présenta alors à l'esprit de tout le monde fut que
10 l'entreprise avait été découverte ou vendue, et qu'on allait se trouver en face de forces supérieures. L'empereur seul soutint que le hasard avait rassemblé ces trois bâtiments, étrangers l'un à l'autre, dans une position qui semblait hostile.

15 Malgré cette conviction, il ordonna d'ôter les sabords et décida qu'en cas d'attaque on irait droit à l'abordage, bien certain qu'avec son équipage de vieux soldats il enlèverait le brick d'emblée* et pourrait ensuite continuer sa route tranquillement,
20 en se dérobant par une contre-marche de nuit à la poursuite des frégates. Cependant, toujours dans l'espoir que c'était le hasard seul qui avait réuni sur ce point les trois bâtiments que l'on avait en vue, il ordonna aux soldats et à toutes
25 les personnes qui pouvaient éveiller les soupçons de descendre sous le pont* ; des signaux transmirent aussitôt le même ordre aux autres navires. Ces dispositions prises, on attendit l'événement.

A six heures du soir,* les deux bâtiments se
30 trouvèrent en présence et à portée de la voix :

bien que la nuit commençât à descendre avec rapidité, on reconnut le brick français *le Zéphir*, capitaine Andrieux. Au reste, il était facile de voir à sa manœuvre qu'il se présentait avec des intentions toutes* pacifiques : ainsi se vérifiaient 5 les prévisions de l'empereur

En se reconnaissant, les deux bricks se saluèrent selon l'usage, et, tout en* continuant leur marche, échangèrent quelques paroles. Les deux capitaines se demandèrent réciproquement quel était le lieu 10 de leur destination. Le capitaine Andrieux répondit qu'il allait à Livourne ; la réponse de *l'Inconstant* fut qu'il allait à Gênes, et qu'il se chargerait volontiers de commissions pour le pays. Le capitaine Andrieux remercia, et demanda com- 15 ment se portait l'empereur, à cette question, Napoléon ne put résister au désir de se mêler à une conversation si intéressante pour lui, il prit le porte-voix des mains du capitaine Chotard et répondit :

20

— A merveille !

Puis, ces politesses échangées, les deux bricks continuèrent leur route, se perdant réciproquement dans la nuit.

On continua de marcher sous toutes voiles, 25 et par un temps très frais, de sorte que, le lendemain 28, on doubla le cap Corse. Ce jour encore, on reconnut un bâtiment de guerre de 74, au large, et se dirigeant sur Bastia* ; mais celui-là ne causa aucune inquiétude ; dès le premier 30

moment, on reconnut qu'il n'avait point de mauvaises intentions.

Avant de quitter l'île d'Elbe, Napoléon avait rédigé deux proclamations; mais, lorsqu'il voulut
5 les faire mettre au net,* personne, pas même lui, ne les put déchiffrer*, il les jeta alors à la mer et en dicta aussitôt deux autres, l'une adressée à l'armée, l'autre au peuple français, tous ceux qui
10 savaient écrire furent aussitôt transformés en secrétaires, tout devint pupitre, tambours, bancs, bonnets, et chacun se mit à l'ouvrage. Au milieu de ce travail, on aperçut les côtes d'Antibes*: elles furent saluées par des cris d'enthousiasme.

II

LES CENT-JOURS

LE 1^{er} mars, à trois heures, la flottille mouilla au
15 golfe Juan; à cinq heures, Napoléon mit pied à terre, et le bivac fut établi dans un bois d'oliviers, où l'on montre encore celui au pied duquel s'assit l'empereur. Vingt-cinq grenadiers et un officier de la garde furent, à l'instant même, envoyés à
20 Antibes, pour tâcher de rallier à eux la garnison; mais, entraînés par leur enthousiasme, ils entrèrent dans la ville en criant: "Vive l'empereur!" On ignorait le débarquement de Napoléon, on les

prit pour des insensés ; le commandant fit lever le pont et les vingt-cinq braves se trouvèrent prisonniers.

Un pareil événement était un échec véritable ; aussi quelques officiers proposèrent-ils à Napoléon 5 de marcher sur Antibes et de l'enlever de vive force, afin de prévenir le mauvais effet que pourrait produire sur l'esprit public la résistance de cette place. Napoléon répondit que c'était sur Paris et non sur Antibes qu'il fallait marcher, 10 et, joignant l'exemple à la parole, il leva le bivac au lever de la lune.

La petite armée atteignit Cannes au milieu de la nuit, traversa Grasse vers les six heures du matin et fit halte sur une hauteur* qui domine la 15 ville. A peine Napoléon y était-il établi qu'il fut entouré des populations environnantes, chez lesquelles le bruit de son miraculeux débarquement s'était déjà répandu ; il les reçut comme il eût fait* aux Tuileries, écoutant les plaintes, 20 promettant de faire justice. L'empereur croyait trouver* à Grasse une route* qu'il avait commandée en 1813, mais la route n'était pas faite : il fallut donc qu'il se décidât à laisser dans la ville sa voiture et les quatre petites pièces d'artillerie qu'il 25 avait amenées de l'île d'Elbe. On prit par des sentiers de montagne* encore couverts de neige, et, le soir, on alla coucher, après avoir fait vingt lieues,* au village de Cérénon ; le 3 mars, on arriva à Barrême ; le 4, à Digne ; le 5 à Gap : dans cette 30

ville, on s'arrêta le temps nécessaire à l'impression des proclamations,* que, dès le lendemain, on répandit par milliers sur la route.

Cependant l'empereur n'était pas sans inquié-
5 tude. Jusqu'alors il n'avait eu affaire qu'aux populations, et leur enthousiasme n'était pas douteux ; mais aucun soldat ne s'était présenté, aucun corps organisé ne s'était rallié à la petite armée, et c'était
10 avant tout sur les régiments envoyés à sa rencontre que Napoléon désirait que sa présence opérât.* Le moment tant craint et tant désiré arriva enfin, entre la Mure et Vizille* : le général Cambronne,* marchant à l'avant-garde avec quarante grenadiers, rencontra
15 un bataillon envoyé de Grenoble pour fermer la route ; le chef du détachement refusa de reconnaître le général Cambronne, et celui-ci envoya prévenir l'empereur de ce qui arrivait.

Napoléon suivait la route, dans une mauvaise voiture de voyage que l'on s'était procurée* à Gap,
20 lorsqu'il apprit cette nouvelle : il fit aussitôt approcher son cheval, monta dessus et s'avança au galop jusqu'à cent pas, à peu près, des soldats qui formaient la haie, sans qu'un seul cri ni une seule acclamation saluassent sa personne.

25 Le moment de perdre ou de gagner la partie* était venu. La disposition du terrain ne permettait pas de reculer : à gauche de la route, une montagne à pic ; à droite,* une petite prairie, de trente pas de large à peine,* bordée par un précipice ; en face, le bataillon
30 sous les armes, s'étendant du précipice à la montagne.

Napoléon s'arrêta sur un petit monticule, à dix pas d'un ruisseau qui traverse la prairie ; puis, se retournant vers le général Bertrand* en lui jetant la bride de son cheval aux mains* :

— On m'a trompé, lui dit-il. mais n'importe, 5
en avant !

A ces mots, il met pied à terre, traverse le ruisseau, marche droit au bataillon, qui reste toujours immobile, et, s'arrêtant à vingt pas de la ligne, au moment où l'aide de camp du général Marchand 10
tire son épée et ordonne de faire feu* :

— Eh quoi ! mes amis, leur dit-il, ne me reconnaissez-vous point ? Je suis votre empereur. S'il est parmi vous un soldat qui veuille* tuer son général, il le peut, me voilà 15

Ces paroles étaient à peine prononcées que le cri de "Vive l'empereur !" s'élance de toutes les bouches. L'aide de camp ordonne une seconde fois de faire feu ; mais sa voix est étouffée au milieu des clameurs ; en même temps, et tandis que quatre 20
lanciers polonais se mettent à sa poursuite, les soldats* se débandent, s'élancent en avant, entourent Napoléon, tombent à ses pieds, lui baisent les mains, et tout cela avec des cris, des acclamations, un délire qui font venir les larmes aux yeux de leur ancien 25
général. Bientôt il se rappelle qu'il n'y a pas un instant à perdre, il ordonne de faire demi-tour à droite, prend la tête de la colonne, et, précédé de* Cambronne et de ses quarante grenadiers, suivi du bataillon qu'on a envoyé pour lui fermer le passage, 30

il arrive au haut de la montagne de Vizille, d'où il voit, une demi-lieue* plus bas, l'aide de camp, toujours poursuivi par les quatre lanciers sur lesquels il gagne, grâce à son cheval frais, s'enfoncer dans la ville, puis bientôt reparaitre à l'autre extrémité, et ne leur* échapper qu'en prenant un chemin* de traverse où leurs chevaux, écrasés de fatigue, ne peuvent pas le suivre.

Cependant cet homme qui fuit et ces quatre
10 hommes qui le poursuivent, en passant comme l'éclair à travers les rues de Vizille, ont tout dit par leur seule présence. Le matin, on a vu passer l'aide de camp à la tête de son bataillon, et voilà qu'il repasse seul et poursuivi; ce qu'on a dit est
15 donc vrai, Napoléon s'avance donc, entouré de l'amour du peuple et des soldats. Tout à coup on aperçoit le cortège au milieu de la côte de la Mure; hommes, femmes, enfants, chacun s'élance au-devant de lui, la ville tout entière l'entoure avant qu'il
20 soit arrivé à ses portes, tandis que les paysans descendent des montagnes, faisant retentir de rocher en rocher le cri de "Vive l'empereur!"

A une lieue de Vizille, on aperçoit sur la route un officier d'infanterie qui accourt, tout couvert de
25 poussière; comme le Grec* de Marathon, il est prêt à tomber de fatigue: il apporte de riches nouvelles.

Vers deux heures de l'après-midi, le 7^e régiment d'infanterie, commandé par le colonel La Bédoyère,* est parti de Grenoble pour s'avancer contre l'empereur.
30 Mais, à une demi-lieue de la ville, le colonel,

qui marchait à cheval en tête de son régiment, a fait tout à coup volte-face et a commandé une halte. Aussitôt un tambour s'est approché du colonel, lui présentant sa caisse : le colonel y a plongé la main, en a tiré une aigle,* et, se levant sur ses étriers, afin 5 que tout le monde pût le voir :

— Soldats ! s'est-il écrié, voici le signe glorieux qui vous guidait dans nos immortelles journées. Celui qui nous conduisit si souvent à la victoire s'avance vers nous pour venger notre humiliation et 10 nos revers. Il est temps de voler sous son drapeau qui ne cessa jamais d'être le nôtre. Que ceux qui m'aiment me suivent ! Vive l'empereur !

Tout le régiment a suivi

L'officier a voulu être le premier à apporter 15 cette nouvelle à l'empereur, et il a pris les devants ; mais le régiment tout entier est derrière lui.

Napoléon pique son cheval et pousse en avant ; toute sa petite armée le suit, criant et courant. Arrivé au haut d'une colline, il aperçoit le régiment 20 de La Bédoyère, qui s'avance au pas accéléré. peine a-t-il été aperçu que les cris de "Vive l'empereur !" retentissent. Ces cris sont entendus par les braves de l'île d'Elbe, qui y répondent. Alors personne ne conserve plus de rang, chacun court, 25 chacun s'élance ; Napoléon se jette au milieu du renfort qui lui arrive ; La Bédoyère s'élance à bas de son cheval, pour embrasser les genoux de Napoléon, celui-ci le reçoit dans ses bras, le presse sur sa poitrine.

— Colonel, lui dit l'empereur, c'est vous qui me replacez sur le trône.

Labédoyère est fou de joie. Cet embrassement lui coûtera la vie,* mais qu'importe ? on a vécu un 5 siècle quand on a entendu de telles paroles.

Napoléon arrive à huit heures du soir sous les murs de Grenoble.

La marche de l'empereur a été si rapide qu'elle a déjoué toutes les mesures ; on n'a pas eu le temps 10 de couper les ponts ; mais les portes sont fermées et le commandant refuse de les ouvrir.

Napoléon ordonne à La Bédoyère de haranguer les artilleurs ; alors le colonel monte sur un tertre et crie d'une voix* forte :

15 — Soldats, nous vous ramenons le héros que vous avez suivi dans tant de batailles ; c'est à vous de* le recevoir et de répéter avec nous l'ancien cri de ralliement des vainqueurs de l'Europe : “ Vive l'empereur ! ”

20 En effet, ce cri magique est, à l'instant même répété, non seulement sur les remparts, mais encore dans tous les quartiers de la ville ; chacun alors se précipite vers les portes, mais les portes sont fermées, et le commandant en a les clefs.

25 Tout à coup les cris “ Place ! place ! ” se font entendre ; c'est la population tout* entière du faubourg Très-Cloître, qui s'avance avec des poutres pour enfoncer les portes. Chacun se range : les bœliers commencent leur office ; les portes gémissent, s'ébran- 30 lent, s'ouvrent : six mille* hommes débordent à la fois.

Ce n'est plus de l'enthousiasme : c'est de la fureur, c'est de la rage. Ces hommes se précipitent sur Napoléon, comme s'ils allaient le mettre en pièces ; en un instant, il est enlevé de son cheval, entraîné, emporté avec des cris frénétiques ; jamais, 5 dans aucune bataille, il n'a couru danger pareil ; tout le monde tremble pour lui, car lui seul peut comprendre que le flot qui l'emporte est tout d'amour.

Enfin il s'arrête dans un hôtel : son état-major 10 le rejoint et l'entoure. La nuit n'est qu'une longue fête pendant laquelle soldats, bourgeois et paysans,* fraternisent ensemble. Cette nuit, Napoléon l'emploie à faire réimprimer ses proclamations. Le 8, au matin, elles sont affichées et répandues de tous 15 côtés ; des émissaires sortent de la ville et les portent sur tous les points, annonçant la prise de possession de la capitale* du Dauphiné, et la prochaine intervention de l'Autriche et du roi de Naples.* 20

Le lendemain, toutes les autorités civiles et militaires viennent offrir leurs félicitations à l'empereur. L'audience finie, il passe en revue la garnison, forte de six mille hommes, et s'achemine aussitôt sur Lyon.* La foule et l'enthousiasme vont 25 toujours augmentant* ; on dirait que la France tout entière l'accompagne.

Sur la route de Bourgoin à Lyon, Napoléon apprend que le duc d'Orléans,* le comte d'Artois* et le maréchal Macdonald* veulent défendre la ville, et 30

qu'on va couper le pont Morand* et le pont de la Guillotière.* Il rit de ces dispositions, auxquelles il ne croit pas, car il connaît le patriotisme des Lyonnais, et ordonne au 4^e hussards de pousser une
5 reconnaissance jusqu'à la Guillotière. Le régiment est accueilli aux cris de "Vive l'empereur!" Ces cris arrivent jusqu'à Napoléon, qui le suit à la distance d'un quart de lieue à peu près; il met son cheval au galop, et arrive seul et confiant au
10 moment où on l'attend* le moins, au milieu de cette population, dont il change par sa présence l'exaltation en folie.

Dans le même instant, les soldats des deux partis se jettent sur les barricades qui les séparent,
15 et travaillent avec une égale ardeur à les démolir; au bout d'un quart d'heure,* ils sont dans les bras les uns des autres. Le duc d'Orléans et le général Macdonald sont forcés de se retirer; le comte d'Artois s'enfuit, ayant pour toute escorte un seul
20 volontaire royal qui ne l'a point abandonné.

A cinq heures du soir, la garnison tout entière s'élance au-devant de l'empereur.

Une heure après, l'armée prend possession de la ville.

25 A huit heures, Napoléon fait son entrée dans la seconde capitale du royaume.

Pendant quatre jours qu'il y resta, il eut constamment vingt mille âmes sous ses fenêtres. *

Le 13, l'empereur partit de Lyon et coucha à
30 Mâcon. L'enthousiasme allait toujours croissant.

Ce n'étaient plus seulement quelques individus isolés, c'étaient les magistrats qui venaient le recevoir aux portes des villes. Le 17, ce fut un préfet* qui le reçut à Auxerre

Dans la soirée, on annonça le maréchal Ney : il 5 venait, honteux de sa froideur en 1814, et de ses serments à Louis XVIII, demander une place dans les rangs des grenadiers. Napoléon lui ouvrit les bras, l'appela *le brave des braves!* et tout fut oublié.

Encore un embrassement mortel.

10

Le 20 mars, à deux heures de l'après-midi, Napoléon arriva à Fontainebleau. Ce château gardait de terribles souvenirs* : dans une de ses chambres, il avait pensé perdre la vie ; dans l'autre, il avait perdu l'empire. Il n'y fit qu'une halte 15 d'un instant, et continua sa marche triomphale sur Paris.

Il y arriva le soir, comme à Grenoble, comme à Lyon, à la fin d'une de ses longues journées, et à la tête des troupes qui gardaient les faubourgs. Il 20 aurait pu, s'il eût voulu, y rentrer avec deux millions d'hommes.

A huit heures et demie du soir, il entra dans la cour des Tuileries.* Là, on se précipite sur lui, ainsi qu'on a fait à Grenoble ; mille bras s'étendent, 25 le saisissent, l'emportent, avec des cris et un délire dont on n'a point l'idée ; la foule est telle qu'il n'y a pas moyen de la maîtriser ; c'est un torrent auquel il faut laisser son cours. Napoléon ne peut dire que ces paroles :

30

— Mes amis, vous m'étouffez !

Dans les appartements, Napoléon trouve une autre foule, foule dorée et respectueuse, foule de courtisans, de généraux, de maréchaux. Ceux-là
5 n'étouffent point Napoléon ; ils se courbent devant lui.

— Messieurs, leur dit l'empereur, ce sont les gens* désintéressés qui m'ont ramené dans ma capitale ; ce sont les sous-lieutenants et les soldats qui
10 ont tout fait ; c'est au peuple, c'est à l'armée que je dois tout

Le 26 mars, tous les grands corps* de l'Empire furent invités à exprimer à Napoléon les vœux de la France. Le 27, on eût dit que les Bourbons
15 n'avaient jamais existé, et toute la nation crut avoir fait un rêve ! En effet, la révolution avait été terminée en un jour* et n'avait pas coûté une goutte de sang. nul n'avait, cette fois, à reprocher à Napoléon la mort d'un père, d'un frère ni d'un
20 ami.

Napoléon examine sa position et la juge.

Deux voies sont ouvertes devant lui :

Tout tenter pour la paix, en se préparant à la guerre, ou commencer la guerre par un de ces
25 mouvements imprévus, par un de ces coups de foudre soudains, qui ont fait de lui le Jupiter Tonnant de l'Europe.

Chacun de ces deux partis* a ses inconvénients.

Tout tenter pour la paix, c'est donner* le temps
30 aux alliés de se reconnaître : ils compteront leurs

soldats et les nôtres, et ils auront autant d'armées que nous de divisions; nous nous retrouverons un contre cinq. Qu'importe! nous avons quelquefois vaincu ainsi

Commencer la guerre, c'est donner raison à ceux 5 qui disent que Napoléon ne veut pas la paix. Puis l'empereur n'a sous la main que quarante mille hommes. C'est assez, il est vrai, pour reconquérir la Belgique et entrer à Bruxelles; mais, une fois arrivé à Bruxelles, on se trouvera enfermé dans un 10 cercle de places fortes qu'il faudra enlever les unes après les autres. D'ailleurs, la Vendée* renue, le duc d'Angoulême* marche sur Lyon et les Marseillais* sur Grenoble.

Napoléon se décide donc pour le premier de ces 15 deux partis. La paix, qu'il refusait à Châtillon* en 1814, après l'envahissement de la France, peut être acceptée en 1815, après le retour de l'île d'Elbe. On peut s'arrêter quand on monte, jamais quand 20 on descend.

Pour montrer son bon vouloir à la nation, il écrit donc une circulaire* aux rois de l'Europe.

Cette ouverture aurait peut-être pu avoir quelque résultat, si le congrès* eût été dissous et qu'on eût pu traiter avec les souverains alliés, un à un; 25 mais, placés comme ils l'étaient en face les uns des autres, leur amour-propre s'exalta, et Napoléon ne reçut aucune réponse à sa lettre.

L'empereur ne fut point étonné de ce silence: il l'avait prévu, et ne perdait pas de temps pour se 30

mettre en mesure de faire la guerre. Tout était désorganisé en France : à peine restait-il un noyau d'armée. Quant au matériel militaire, poudre, fusils, canons, tout semblait avoir disparu.

5 Pendant trois mois, Napoléon travailla seize heures par jour. A sa voix, la France se couvrit de manufactures, d'ateliers, de fonderies, et les seuls armuriers de la capitale* fournirent jusqu'à trois
10 mille fusils en vingt-quatre heures, tandis que les tailleurs confectionnaient, dans le même intervalle, jusqu'à quinze et même dix-huit cents habits. En même temps, les cadres* des régiments de ligne sont portés de deux bataillons à cinq ; ceux de la cavalerie sont renforcés de deux escadrons ; deux
15 cents bataillons de gardes nationales sont organisés ; vingt régiments de marine et quarante régiments de jeunes gardes sont mis en état de service ; les anciens soldats licenciés* sont rappelés sous les drapeaux ; les soldats et officiers en retraite sont
20 engagés à rentrer en ligne. Six armées se forment, sous les noms d'armées du Nord, de la Moselle, du Rhin, du Jura, des Alpes, des Pyrénées, tandis qu'une septième, sous le nom d'armée de réserve, se réunit sous les murs de Paris et de Lyon, que l'on
25 va fortifier.

Le général du génie* Haxo est chargé de cette grande œuvre ; il fortifiera Paris. Le général Lérý fortifiera Lyon.

Il n'y a pas un instant à perdre : les alliés, qui
30 se disputent la Saxe et Cracovie,* sont restés l'arme

au bras et la mèche allumée. Quatre ordres sont donnés, et l'Europe marche de nouveau contre la France. Wellington et Blucher rassemblent deux cent vingt mille hommes, Anglais, Prussiens, Hanovriens, Belges et Brunswickois, entre Liège et 5 Courtray; les Bavaïois, les Badois, les Wurtembergeois, se pressent dans le Palatinat et dans la Forêt Noire; les Autrichiens s'avancent à marches forcées pour les rejoindre; les Russes traversent la Francanie et la Saxe, et, en moins de deux mois, seront 10 arrivés de la Pologne aux bords du Rhin. Neuf cent mille hommes sont prêts; trois cent mille autres vont l'être. La coalition a le secret de Cadmus; à sa voix, les soldats sortent de terre.

Cependant, à mesure que Napoléon voit grossir 15 les armées ennemies, il sent de plus en plus le besoin de s'appuyer sur ce peuple qui lui a manqué en 1814. Un instant il hésite s'il ne laissera pas de côté la couronne impériale pour ressaisir l'épée du premier consul. mais, né au milieu des révolu- 20 tions, Napoléon a peur d'elles; il craint l'empoiement populaire, parce qu'il sait que rien ne le peut dompter. La nation s'est plainte de manquer de liberté, il lui donnera l'acte additionnel, 1790 a eu sa fédération, 1815 aura son champ de mai: 25 peut-être la France s'y trompera-t-elle. Napoléon passe en revue les fédérés, et, le 1^{er} juin, sur l'autel* du Champ de Mars,* il fait serment de fidélité à la nouvelle constitution. Le même jour, il ouvre les Chambres.

Puis, débarrassé de toute cette comédie politique qu'il joue à regret, il reprend son véritable rôle et redevient général. Il a cent quatre-vingt mille hommes disponibles pour ouvrir la campagne. De
5 ces cent quatre-vingt mille hommes, l'empereur doit distraire un quart pour garnir Bordeaux, Toulouse, Chambéry, Belfort, Strasbourg, et comprimer la Vendée, ce vieux cancer politique mal extirpé par
Hoche* et par Kléber* : il reste donc avec cent vingt-
10 cinq mille hommes, qu'il concentre de Philippeville à Maubeuge. Il a deux cent mille hommes devant lui, c'est vrai, mais, s'il attend seulement six semaines encore, il aura à la fois l'Europe tout* entière sur les bras. Le 12 juin, il part de Paris; le 14,
15 il porte son quartier général à Beaumont, où il campe au milieu de soixante mille hommes, jetant à sa droite seize mille hommes sur Philippeville, et à sa gauche quarante mille hommes vers Solre-sur-Sambre. Dans cette position, Napoléon a devant
20 lui la Sambre, à sa droite la Meuse, à sa gauche et derrière lui les bois d'Avesne, de Chimay et de Gedinne.

De son côté, l'ennemi, placé entre la Sambre et l'Escaut, s'échelonne sur un espace* de vingt lieues
25 à peu près.

L'armée prusso-saxonne, commandée en chef par Blucher, forme l'avant-garde. Elle compte cent vingt mille hommes et trois cents* bouches à feu.

Elle se divise en quatre grands corps; le premier,
30 commandé par le général Ziethen, qui a son quartier

général à Charleroi et Fleurus, et qui forme le point de concentration ; le second, commandé par le général Pirsch, cantonné aux environs de Namur ; le troisième, commandé par le général Thielmann, et qui borde la Meuse aux environs de Dinant ; le 5 quatrième, commandé par le général Bülow, et qui, placé en arrière des trois premiers, a établi son quartier général à Liège. Disposée ainsi, l'armée prusso-saxonne a la forme d'un fer à cheval dont les deux extrémités s'avancent d'un côté jusqu'à 10 Charleroi et de l'autre jusqu'à Dinant, et sont éloignées, l'une de trois lieues, l'autre d'une lieue et demie seulement de nos avant-postes.

L'armée anglo-hollandaise est commandée en chef par Wellington ; elle compte cent quatre mille 15 deux cents hommes, et forme dix divisions : ces divisions sont séparées en deux grands corps d'infanterie et un corps de cavalerie. Le premier corps d'infanterie est commandé par le prince d'Orange, dont le quartier général est à Braine-le-Comte ; 20 le second corps est commandé par le lieutenant général Hill, dont le quartier général est à Bruxelles ; enfin la cavalerie, qui stationne autour de Grammont, est commandée par lord Uxbridge ; quant au grand parc d'artillerie, il est cantonné à 25 Gand.

La seconde armée présente la même disposition de lignes que la première ; seulement, le fer à cheval est retourné, et, au lieu que ce soient les extrémités, c'est le centre qui se trouve le plus rapproché de 30

notre front de bataille, dont il est entièrement séparé par l'armée prusso-saxonne.

Napoléon est arrivé dans la soirée du 14 à deux lieues des ennemis, sans qu'ils aient* encore la moindre connaissance de sa marche ; il passe une partie de la nuit courbé sur une grande carte des environs, et entouré d'espions qui lui apportent des renseignements certains sur les différentes positions de l'ennemi ; lorsqu'il les a entièrement reconnues, il calcule avec sa rapidité ordinaire qu'ils ont tellement étendu leurs lignes qu'il leur faut trois jours pour se réunir ; en les attaquant à l'improviste, il peut diviser les deux armées et les battre séparément. D'avance il a concentré en un seul corps vingt mille chevaux : c'est le sabre de cette cavalerie qui coupera par le milieu le serpent dont il écrasera ensuite les tronçons séparés.

Le plan de la bataille est tracé : Napoléon expédie ses différents ordres, et continue d'examiner le terrain et d'interroger les espions. Tout le confirme dans l'idée qu'il connaît parfaitement la position de l'ennemi, et que l'ennemi, au contraire, ignore complètement la sienne, quand tout à coup un aide de camp du général Gérard arrive au galop : il apporte la nouvelle que le lieutenant général Bourmont,* les colonels Clouet et Willoutrey, du quatrième corps, sont passés à l'ennemi. Napoléon l'écoute avec la tranquillité d'un homme habitué aux trahisons ; puis, se retournant vers Ney, qui est debout près de lui :

— Eh bien, vous entendez, maréchal, c'est votre protégé, dont je ne voulais pas, dont vous m'avez répondu, et que je n'ai placé qu'à votre considération* : le voilà passé à l'ennemi.

— Sire, lui répondit le maréchal, pardonnez-moi ; 5 mais je le croyais si dévoué que j'en eusse répondu comme de moi-même.

— Monsieur le maréchal, reprend Napoléon en se levant et en lui appuyant la main sur le bras, ceux qui sont bleus restent bleus,* et ceux qui sont 10 blancs restent blancs.

Puis il se rassied et fait à l'instant même à son plan d'attaque les changements que cette défection nécessite.

A la pointe du jour,* ses colonnes se mettront en 15 mouvement. L'avant-garde de la gauche, formée de la division d'infanterie du général Jérôme Bonaparte,* repoussera l'avant-garde du corps prussien du général Ziethen et s'emparera du pont de Marchiennes ; la droite,* commandée par le général 20 Gérard, surprendra de bonne heure le pont de Châtelet, tandis que la cavalerie légère du général Pajol, formant l'avant-garde du centre, s'avancera, soutenue par le troisième corps d'infanterie, et s'em- 25 parera du pont de Charleroi. A dix heures, l'armée française aura passé la Sambre et sera sur le territoire ennemi.

• Tout s'exécute* comme Napoléon l'a ordonné. Jérôme culbute Ziethen et lui fait cinq cents prisonniers ; Gérard s'empare du pont de Châtelet 30

et repousse l'ennemi plus d'une lieue* au delà de* la rivière; il n'y a que Vandamme qui est en retard,* et qui, à six heures du matin, n'a pas encore quitté son camp.

5 — Il nous rejoindra, dit Napoléon; chargez, Pajol, avec votre cavalerie légère; je vous suis* avec ma garde.

Pajol part et culbute tout ce qui se présente: un carré d'infanterie veut tenir, le général Des-
10 michels se précipite sur lui à la tête des 4^e et 9^e régiments de chasseurs, l'enfonce, le taille en morceaux et lui fait quelques centaines de prisonniers. Pajol arrive, en sabrant, devant Charleroi, y entre au galop, Napoléon le suit. A trois heures, Van-
15 damme arrive: un chiffre* mal fait est cause de son retard; il a pris un quatre pour un six. Il est le premier puni de son erreur, puisqu'il n'a point combattu. Le soir même, toute l'armée française a passé la Sambre; l'armée de Blücher est en retraite
20 sur Fleurus, laissant entre elle et l'armée anglo-hollandaise un vide de quatre lieues.

Napoléon voit la faute et s'empresse d'en profiter: il donne à Ney l'ordre verbal de partir, avec quarante-deux mille hommes, par la chaussée de
25 Bruxelles à Charleroi, et de ne s'arrêter qu'au hameau des Quatre-Bras,* point important, situé à l'intersection des routes de* Bruxelles, de Nivelles, de Charleroi et de Namur. Là, il contiendra les Anglais, tandis que Napoléon battra les Prus-
30 siens avec les soixante et douze mille hommes

qui lui restent. Le maréchal part à l'instant même.

Napoléon, qui croit ses ordres exécutés, se remet en marche le 16 juin au matin, et découvre l'armée prussienne rangée en bataille entre Saint-Amand et 5 Sombref, et faisant face à la Sambre : elle est composée des trois corps qui étaient cantonnés à Charleroi, à Namur et à Dinant. Sa position est détestable, car elle prête son flanc droit à Ney, qui, s'il a suivi les instructions reçues, doit être à cette heure 10 aux Quatre-Bras, c'est-à-dire à deux lieues sur ses derrières.* Napoléon fait ses dispositions en conséquence : il range son armée sur une même ligne que celle de Blucher, pour l'attaquer de front, et envoie un officier de confiance à Ney pour lui ordonner de 15 laisser un détachement en observation aux Quatre-Bras, et de se rabattre en toute hâte sur Bry pour tomber sur les derrières des Prussiens. Un autre officier part en même temps pour arrêter le corps du comte d'Erlon, qui forme l'arrière-garde et qui, 20 par conséquent, ne doit être encore qu'à Villers-Perruin : il lui* fera faire un à-droite* et le ramènera sur Bry. Cette nouvelle instruction avance les affaires d'une heure et double les chances, puisque, si l'un manque, l'autre ne manquera pas, et que, 25 si tous deux arrivent à la distance où ils doivent se suivre, l'armée prussienne tout entière est perdue. Les premiers coups de canon que Napoléon entendra du côté de Bry ou de Vagnelée seront le signal de l'attaque de front. 30

Ces dispositions prises, Napoléon fait halte et attend.

Le temps s'écoule et Napoléon n'entend rien. Deux heures, trois heures, quatre heures de l'après-midi arrivent : même silence. Cependant la journée est trop précieuse pour qu'on la laisse se perdre ainsi ; celle du lendemain peut amener une jonction* ; alors ce sera un nouveau plan à faire[^] et une chance perdue à regagner ; Napoléon donne l'ordre de l'attaque : d'ailleurs, la bataille occupera les Prussiens, et ils feront moins attention à Ney, qui arrivera sans doute au canon.*

Napoléon entame le combat par une vaste attaque sur la gauche ; il espère ainsi attirer de ce côté la majeure partie des forces de l'ennemi et l'éloigner de sa ligne de retraite pour le moment où Ney arrivera. Puis il dispose tout pour enfoncer son centre, et le couper ainsi en deux, en renfermant la plus forte partie de l'armée dans le triangle de fer qu'il a disposé dès la veille.* Le combat s'engage et dure deux heures sans que l'on reçoive aucune nouvelle de Ney ni de d'Erlon ; cependant ils ont dû être prévenus à dix heures du matin, et l'un n'avait que deux lieues, l'autre deux lieues et demie à faire. Napoléon sera obligé de vaincre seul. Il donne l'ordre d'engager ses réserves pour opérer sur le centre le mouvement qui doit décider du succès de la journée. En ce moment, on lui annonce qu'une forte colonne ennemie se montre dans la plaine d'Heppignies, menaçant son aile*

gauche. Comment cette colonne est-elle passée entre Ney et d'Erlon? comment Blucher a-t-il exécuté la manœuvre que lui, Napoléon, avait rêvée? C'est ce qu'il ne peut comprendre. N'importe, il arrête ses réserves pour les opposer à cette 5 nouvelle attaque, et le mouvement sur le centre est suspendu.

Un quart d'heure après, il apprend que cette colonne est le corps de d'Erlon, qui a enfilé la route de Saint-Amand au lieu de celle de Bry. Il reprend 10 alors sa manœuvre interrompue, marche sur Ligny, l'emporte au pas de charge, et met l'ennemi en retraite. Mais la nuit arrive, et toute l'armée de Blucher défile par Bry, qui devrait être occupé par Ney et vingt mille hommes. Néanmoins la journée 15 est gagnée: quarante pièces de canon tombent en notre pouvoir; vingt mille hommes sont hors de combat; et l'armée prussienne est tellement démoralisée* que, des soixante et dix mille hommes dont elle se compose, à peine si à minuit les géné- 20 raux ont pu rallier trente mille. Blucher lui-même a été* renversé de cheval, et ne s'est échappé qu'à la faveur de l'obscurité.

Pendant la nuit, Napoléon reçoit des nouvelles de Ney; les fautes de 1814* recommencent en 1815: 25 Ney, au lieu de marcher dès le point du jour, comme il en* a reçu l'ordre, sur les Quatre-Bras, qui ne sont occupés que par dix mille Hollandais, n'est parti de Gosselies qu'à midi, de sorte que, comme les Quatre-Bras étaient désignés par Wellington 30

pour le rendez-vous successif des différents corps d'armée, ces corps y étaient arrivés de midi à trois heures, et qu'ainsi Ney avait trouvé trente mille hommes au lieu de dix mille. Le maréchal, 5 qui se croyait suivi des* vingt mille hommes de d'Erlon, n'avait point hésité à attaquer. Son étonnement avait donc été grand lorsqu'il avait vu que le corps sur lequel il comptait ne venait point à son secours, et que, repoussé par des forces supé- 10 eures, il ne retrouvait pas sa réserve en étendant la main du côté où elle devait être. Il avait, en conséquence, fait courir après elle, et lui avait donné l'ordre positif de revenir. Mais, dans ce moment, il avait reçu lui-même l'avis de Napoléon. 15 Il était trop tard : le combat était engagé, il fallait le soutenir. Néanmoins, il avait de nouveau fait courir au-devant du comte d'Erlon pour l'autoriser à continuer sa route sur Bry, et s'était retourné sur l'ennemi avec une nouvelle rage. Dans cet instant, 20 un nouveau renfort de douze mille Anglais était* arrivé, conduit par Wellington, et Ney avait été obligé de battre en retraite sur Frasne, tandis que le corps d'armée du comte d'Erlon, usant sa journée en marches et en contre-marches, s'était constam- 25 ment promené entre deux canonnades sur un rayon de trois lieues, sans aucune utilité ni pour Ney ni pour Napoléon.

Cependant, si la victoire était moins décisive qu'elle n'aurait pu l'être,* ce n'en* était pas moins 30 une victoire. L'armée prussienne, en pleine retraite,

avait, en se retirant par sa gauche, démasqué* l'armée anglaise, qui se trouvait alors la plus avancée. Napoléon, pour l'empêcher de se rallier, détache après elle Grouchy avec trente-cinq mille hommes, lui ordonnant de la presser jusqu'à ce qu'elle fasse 5 tête. Mais Grouchy va faire, à son tour,* la même faute que Ney, seulement les conséquences en seront terribles.

Si habitué que* fût le général en chef anglais à la rapidité des coups de Napoléon, il avait cru arriver 10 à temps aux Quatre-Bras pour faire sa jonction avec Blücher. En effet, le 15, à sept heures du soir, lord Wellington reçoit à Bruxelles un courrier du feld-maréchal, qui lui annonce que toute l'armée 15 française est en mouvement et que les hostilités sont commencées* : quatre heures après, au moment où il va monter à cheval, il apprend que les Français sont maîtres de Charleroi, et que leur armée, forte de cent cinquante mille hommes, marche sur Bruxelles. Il se met aussitôt en route, ordonnant à 20 toutes ses troupes de se concentrer sur les Quatre-Bras, où il arrive à six heures pour apprendre que l'armée prussienne est battue. Si le maréchal Ney avait suivi les instructions reçues, il apprendait qu'elle était détruite. 25

Vers les deux heures du matin, Napoléon envoie un aide de camp au maréchal Ney : l'empereur ordonne au maréchal de recommencer son attaque sur les Quatre-Bras.

Au point du jour, l'armée française se remet en 30

marche sur deux colonnes, l'une de soixante-huit mille hommes, commandée par Napoléon, et qui suit les Anglais; l'autre, de trente-quatre mille hommes, commandée par Grouchy, et qui poursuit
5 les Prussiens.

Ney est encore en retard, et c'est Napoléon qui arrive le premier en vue de la ferme des Quatre-Bras, où il aperçoit un corps de cavalerie anglaise : il lance pour la reconnaître un corps de cent
10 hussards, qui revient vivement repoussé par le régiment ennemi. Alors l'armée française fait halte et prend sa position de bataille : les cuirassiers du général Milhaud s'étendent sur la droite, la cavalerie légère s'échelonne à la gauche,
15 l'infanterie se place au centre et en deuxième ligne, l'artillerie profite des mouvements de terrain et se met en position.

Ney n'a point encore paru, Napoléon, qui craint de le perdre, comme la veille, ne veut rien com-
20 mencer sans lui. Cinq cents hussards sont lancés vers Frasné, où il doit être, pour se mettre en communication avec lui. Deux officiers se détachent et vont le presser de déboucher sur les Quatre-Bras. Rien ne peut se faire que par
25 instinct ou par appréciation, la pluie qui tombe par torrents bornant la vue à un horizon très étroit. Après une heure de canonnade, pendant laquelle il a les yeux sans cesse tournés du côté de Frasné, Napoléon, voyant que le maréchal tarde toujours,
30 envoie ordres sur ordres. Alors on vient lui dire

que le comte d'Erlon paraît enfin avec son corps d'armée : comme il n'a encore donné ni aux Quatre-Bras ni à Ligny, Napoléon le charge de la poursuite de l'ennemi. Il prend aussitôt la tête de la colonne et marche au pas de charge sur les Quatre-Bras. Derrière lui, le deuxième corps paraît : Napoléon met son cheval au galop, traverse, avec une trentaine* d'hommes seulement, l'espace qui s'étend entre les deux chaussées, arrive au maréchal Ney, auquel il reproche non seulement sa lenteur 10 de la veille, mais encore celle de ce jour ; puis, sans écouter les excuses du maréchal, il se porte à la tête de l'armée, où il trouve les soldats qui marchent dans les terres ayant de la boue jusqu'aux genoux, et ceux qui suivent la chaussée de l'eau 15 jusqu'à mi-jambes : il juge que l'inconvénient est le même pour l'armée anglo-hollandaise, et qu'elle éprouve de plus tous les embarras d'une retraite. Il ordonne alors à l'artillerie volante* de prendre les devants par la chaussée, où elle peut rouler en toute 20 facilité, et de ne pas cesser un instant de faire feu, ne fût-ce que pour indiquer sa position et celle de l'ennemi ; et les deux armées continuent de marcher dans ce marais, au milieu de la brume, se traînant dans la vase, pareilles à deux immenses 25 dragons antédiluviens.

Vers les six heures du soir, la canonnade se fixe et augmente. En effet, l'ennemi a démasqué une batterie de quinze pièces. Napoléon devine que son arrière-garde s'est renforcée, et que, comme 30

Wellington doit être arrivé près de la forêt de Soignes, il va prendre pour la nuit position en avant de cette forêt. L'empereur veut s'en assurer : il fait déployer les cuirassiers du général Milhaud, 5 qui font mine de charger, sous la protection de quatre batteries d'artillerie légère. L'ennemi démasque alors quarante pièces, qui tournent à la fois. Il n'y a plus de doute : toute l'armée est là ; c'est ce que Napoléon voulait savoir. Il 10 rappelle ses cuirassiers, dont il a besoin pour le lendemain, prend position en avant de Planchenoit,* établit son quartier général à la ferme du Caillou, et ordonne que, pendant la nuit, un observatoire soit* dressé, du haut duquel il puisse, le lendemain 15 matin, découvrir toute la plaine.

A dix heures, Napoléon, qui croit Grouchy à Wavre,* lui envoie un officier pour lui annoncer qu'il a devant lui toute l'armée anglo-hollandaise, et que, selon toute probabilité, il lui livrera bataille le 20 lendemain ; en conséquence, il lui ordonne de détacher de son camp, deux heures avant le jour, une division de sept mille hommes, avec seize pièces d'artillerie, et d'acheminer cette division sur Saint-Lambert, afin qu'elle puisse se mettre en 25 communication avec la droite de la grande armée et opérer sur la gauche de l'armée anglo-hollandaise, quant à lui,* il marchera avec la plus grande partie de ses troupes dans la même direction que la division qui lui servira d'avant-garde, et tâchera 30 d'arriver avec toute sa puissance vers les deux

heures de l'après-midi, moment où sa présence sera décisive. Au reste, Napoléon, pour ne pas attirer les Prussiens par sa canonnade, n'engagera l'action qu'assez avant dans la matinée.

Cette dépêche est à peine expédiée qu'un aide de 5 camp du maréchal Grouchy arrive avec un rapport écrit à cinq heures du soir, et daté de Gembloux.* Le maréchal a perdu la voie de l'ennemi ; il ignore s'il s'est porté sur Bruxelles ou sur Liège : en conséquence, il a établi des avant-gardes sur chacune de 10 ces routes. Comme Napoléon visite les postes, il ne trouve la dépêche qu'en rentrant. Il expédie aussitôt un autre ordre pareil à celui qu'il a adressé à Wavre.

Pendant la nuit du 17 au 18, les positions des 15 quatre armées sont celles-ci :

Napoléon, avec soixante-huit mille hommes et deux cent quarante pièces de canon, bivaque en arrière et en avant de Planchenoit, à cheval* sur la grand'route* de Bruxelles à Charleroi. 20

Wellington,* avec toute l'armée anglo-hollandaise, forte de plus de quatre-vingt mille* hommes et de deux cent cinquante bouches à feu, a son quartier général à Waterloo, et s'étend sur la crête* d'une éminence depuis Braine-Laleud jusqu'à 25 la Haie.

Blucher est à Wavre, où il a rallié soixante et quinze mille hommes, avec lesquels il est prêt à se porter partout où le canon lui indiquera qu'on a besoin de lui. 30

Enfin, Grouchy est à Gembloux, où il se repose, après avoir fait trois lieues en deux jours.

La nuit s'écoule ainsi : chacun pressent bien qu'on est à la veille de Zama*, mais on ignore 5 encore lequel sera Scipion, et lequel Annibal.

—* Enfin, le 18 juin, vers onze heures, le soleil paraît à travers les nuages, et la bataille commence. Nos soldats attaquent avec un entrain admirable. Ney se multiplie : Eylau,* la Moscowa* sont dépassés 10 en horreur comme en héroïsme. Le maréchal s'empare de la Haie-Sainte. Mais, vers quatre heures du soir, un corps d'armée que l'on avait signalé et que l'on croyait être celui de Grouchy, débouche à notre extrême droite. C'était un lieutenant 15 de Blucher, Bülow, avec trente mille hommes. Napoléon envoie le comte de Lobau avec dix mille hommes pour l'arrêter ; Ney, de son côté, attaque le Mont Saint-Jean. Il lance contre les lignes anglaises les cuirassiers du général Milhaud. 20 Onze fois, ces soldats intrépides chargent l'ennemi, le sabrent et lui enlèvent une partie de son artillerie ; une division anglaise est presque anéantie, et ses débris vont répandre jusque dans Bruxelles, divisé d'opinion, l'allégresse ou l'effroi. 25 Si notre infanterie de réserve eût été alors disponible, la victoire était à nous* : mais elle se battait contre Bülow. A sept heures, nos cavaliers sont rejetés du plateau : ils y étaient restés deux heures. Napoléon se décide enfin à 30 mener au secours de Ney ce qui lui reste de sa

vieille garde. Rien ne résiste à ces héros. Mais les Anglais se reforment, et nos réserves n'arrivent pas. A ce moment, une canonnade rapprochée éclate sur notre droite. "C'est Grouchy," s'écrient nos soldats. Hélas! c'était le reste de l'armée de 5 Blücher. Wellington reprend l'offensive. Notre gauche recule en combattant. Mais sur notre droite le corps d'Erlon est rompu. La fusillade et le canon éclatent bientôt à mille mètres derrière nous. Le soldat, à qui l'on avait promis l'appui 10 de Grouchy et qui n'a vu arriver que Bülow et Blücher, se croit trahi, perd la tête et n'écoute plus la voix de ses chefs. La nuit d'ailleurs* est venue compléter le désastre, il est plus de neuf heures. L'armée débandée, poursuivie par la 15 cavalerie ennemie, ne sait plus si l'empereur est vivant ou mort, et court affolée vers la route de France. Les carrés de la garde, au milieu desquels se trouve Napoléon, noyés dans les flots de l'ennemi, reculent en combattant sans cesse. Avec 20 un courage non moins admirable, on vit, après que nos régiments eurent été rompus,* des groupes d'officiers et de soldats d'élite, serrés autour des aigles, se frayer un passage à travers l'ennemi. Pas un drapeau ne fut perdu dans cette immense 25 déroute. Soixante-douze mille hommes avaient succombé sous l'effort de cent trente mille, après dix* heures d'une lutte acharnée.* La victoire coûtait à l'ennemi plus de vingt-deux mille hommes, dont les deux tiers aux Anglais; nous 30

en avons perdu trente mille, tués, blessés ou pris.

Napoléon tente en vain d'arrêter le désordre : la nuit empêche de le voir, le tumulte de l'entendre.
 5 Alors il descend de cheval, se jette l'épée à la main au milieu d'un carré ; Jérôme le suit, en disant :

— Tu as raison, frère, ici doit tomber tout ce qui porte le nom de Bonaparte.

Mais il est pris par ses généraux et ses officiers
 10 d'état-major, repoussé par ses grenadiers, qui veulent bien mourir, mais qui ne veulent pas que leur empereur meure* avec eux. on le remet à cheval, un officier prend la bride et l'entraîne au galop, il passe ainsi au milieu des Prussiens, qui l'ont débordé
 15 de près d'une demie-lieue. Ni balles* ni boulets* ne veulent de lui. Enfin il arrive à Jemmapes,* s'y arrête un instant, renouvelle ses tentatives de ralliement, auxquelles la nuit, la confusion, la déroute générale, l'encombrement, et, plus que tout cela, la
 20 poursuite acharnée des Prussiens, s'opposent encore. Puis, convaincu que c'est seulement de Paris qu'il peut rallier l'armée et sauver la France, il continue sa route, fait une halte à Philippeville, et arrive le 20 à Laon.

25 Le 21 juin, Napoléon est de retour à Paris.

Le 22, la chambre des pairs et la chambre des députés se déclarent en permanence,* et proclament traître à la patrie quiconque voudra les suspendre ou les dissoudre.

Le même jour, Napoléon abdique en faveur de son fils.*

Le 8 juillet, Louis XVIII rentre à Paris.

Le 14, Napoléon, après avoir refusé* l'offre du capitaine Baudin, qui lui propose de le conduire aux États-Unis, passe à bord du *Bellérophon*, commandé par le capitaine Martland, et écrit au prince régent d'Angleterre :

“Altesse royale — En butte aux factions qui divisent mon pays et à l'inimitié des plus grandes puissances de l'Europe, j'ai consommé ma carrière politique. Je viens, comme Thémistocle, m'asseoir au foyer du peuple britannique. Je me mets sous la protection de ses lois, que je réclame de Votre Altesse royale, comme du plus puissant, du plus constant, du plus généreux de mes ennemis.

“NAPOLÉON.”

Le 16 juillet, le *Bellérophon* fit voile pour l'Angleterre.

Le 24, il mouilla à Torbay, où Napoléon apprit que le général Gourgaud, porteur de sa lettre, n'avait pu communiquer avec la terre et avait été forcé de se dessaisir de ses dépêches.

Le 26 au soir, le *Bellérophon* entra dans la rade de Plymouth. Là, les premiers bruits de déportation à Sainte-Hélène se répandirent : Napoléon ne voulut pas y croire.

Le 30 juillet, un commissaire signifia à Napoléon la résolution relative à sa déportation à Sainte-

Hélène. Napoléon, indigné, prit une plume et écrivit :

“ Je proteste solennellement ici, à la face du ciel et des hommes, contre la violence qui m'est faite, 5 contre la violation de mes droits les plus sacrés, en disposant, par la force, de ma personne et de ma liberté. Je suis venu librement* à bord du *Bellérophon* ; je ne suis pas le prisonnier, je suis l'hôte de l'Angleterre. J'y suis venu à l'instigation* même 10 du capitaine, qui a dit avoir des ordres du gouvernement de me recevoir et de me conduire en Angleterre avec ma suite, si cela m'était agréable. Je me suis présenté de bonne foi, pour venir me mettre sous la protection des lois de l'Angleterre. 15 Aussitôt assis à bord du *Bellérophon*, je fus sur le foyer du peuple britannique. Si le gouvernement, en donnant ordre au capitaine du *Bellérophon* de me recevoir, ainsi que ma suite, n'a voulu que tendre une embûche, il a forfait à l'honneur et flétri 20 son pavillon.

“ Si cet acte se consommait, ce serait* en vain que les Anglais voudraient désormais parler de leur loyauté,* de leurs lois et de leur liberté : la foi britannique se trouvera perdue dans l'hospitalité du 25 *Bellérophon*.

“ J'en appelle à l'histoire* : elle dira qu'un ennemi, qui fit longtemps la guerre au peuple anglais, vint librement, dans son infortune, chercher un asile sous ses lois : quelle plus grande preuve pouvait-il

lui donner de son estime et de sa confiance ? Mais comment répondit-on, en Angleterre, à une telle magnanimité ? On feignit de tendre une main hospitalière à cet ennemi ; et, quand il se fut livré de bonne foi, on l'immola ! NAPOLÉON. 5

A bord du *Bellérophon*, en mer."

Le 7 août, malgré cette protestation, Napoléon fut forcé de quitter le *Bellérophon* pour passer à bord du *Northumberland*. L'ordre ministériel portait d'ôter à Napoléon son épée ; l'amiral Keith eut 10 honte d'un pareil ordre et ne voulut pas le mettre à exécution.

Le lundi, 7 août 1815, le *Northumberland* appareilla pour Sainte-Hélène.

Le 16 octobre, soixante et dix jours après son 15 départ de l'Angleterre, et cent dix jours après avoir quitté la France, Napoléon toucha le rocher dont il devait faire un piédestal.

III

NAPOLÉON A SAINTE-HÉLÈNE

L'EMPEREUR coucha le même soir dans une espèce d'auberge où il se trouva fort mal. Le lendemain, 20 à six heures du matin, il partit à cheval, avec le grand maréchal Bertrand et l'amiral Keith, pour

Longwood, maison que ce dernier avait arrêtée pour sa résidence, comme la plus convenable de l'île. En revenant, l'empereur s'arrêta à un petit pavillon dépendant* d'une maison de campagne qui appartenait 5 à un négociant de l'île, nommé M. Balcombe. C'était son logis temporaire, et il devait demeurer là tant que Longwood ne serait pas en état de le recevoir.

Le soir, quand Napoléon voulut se coucher, il se trouva qu'une fenêtre, sans vitrages, sans contre-
10 vents et sans rideaux, donnait sur son lit. M. de Las-Cases* et son fils la barricadèrent du mieux qu'ils purent et gagnèrent une mansarde, où ils se couchèrent chacun sur un matelas; les valets de chambre, enveloppés de leurs manteaux, s'étaient
15 jetés en travers de la porte.

Le lendemain, Napoléon déjeuna sans nappe ni serviette, avec le reste du diner de la veille. Ce n'était que le prélude de la misère et des privations qui l'attendaient à Longwood.

20 Cependant, peu à peu, cette position s'améliora : on fit venir du *Northumberland* le linge et l'argenterie; le colonel du 53^e avait fait offrir une tente, que l'on dressa en prolongement de la chambre de l'empereur; dès lors, Napoléon, avec sa régularité
25 ordinaire, songea à mettre un peu d'ordre dans ses journées.

A dix heures, l'empereur faisait appeler M. de Las-Cases pour déjeuner avec lui; le déjeuner fini, et après une demi-heure de conversation, M. de
30 Las-Cases relisait ce qui lui avait été dicté la veille :

cette lecture achevée, Napoléon continuait de dicter* jusqu'à quatre heures. A quatre heures, il s'habillait et sortait, pour qu'on pût faire sa chambre, descendait dans le jardin, qu'il affectionnait beaucoup, et au bout duquel une espèce de berceau 5 recouvert en toile, comme une tente, lui offrait un abri contre le soleil; il s'asseyait ordinairement sous ce berceau, où l'on avait apporté une table et des chaises; là, il dictait à celui de ses compagnons qui arrivait de la ville pour ce travail, jusqu'à 10 l'heure du dîner, qui était fixée à sept heures. Le reste de la soirée, on lisait ou du Racine,* ou du Molière,* car on n'avait pas de Corneille : Napoléon appelait cela aller à la comédie ou à la tragédie. Enfin il se couchait le plus tard qu'il pouvait, 15 attendu que, lorsqu'il se couchait de bonne heure, il se réveillait au milieu de la nuit et ne pouvait plus se rendormir.

Au bout de quelques jours, il se trouva fatigué et malade. On avait mis trois chevaux à sa 20 disposition, et, pensant qu'une promenade lui ferait du bien, il arrangea, avec le général Gourgaud* et le général Montholon,* une cavalcade pour le lendemain, mais, dans la journée, il apprit qu'un officier anglais avait ordre de ne pas le perdre de vue : aussitôt il 25 renvoya les chevaux, en disant que tout était calcul dans la vie, et que, dès que le mal d'apercevoir son géôlier était plus grand que le bien que pouvait procurer l'exercice, c'était un gain tout clair que de rester chez soi.*

L'empereur remplaça cette distraction par des promenades de nuit qui duraient quelquefois jusqu'à deux heures du matin

Enfin, le dimanche 10 décembre, l'amiral fit
5 prévenir Napoléon que sa maison de Longwood
était prête, et, le même jour, l'empereur s'y rendit
à cheval. L'objet qui lui causa le plus vif plaisir,
dans son nouvel ameublement, fut une baignoire en
bois, que l'amiral était parvenu à faire exécuter, sur
10 ses dessins, par un charpentier de la ville, une
baignoire étant un meuble inconnu à Longwood ;
le même jour, Napoléon en profita.

Toute la petite colonie était logée à Longwood,
à l'exception du maréchal Bertrand et de sa famille,
15 qui habitaient Hut's-Gate, mauvaise petite maison*
située sur la route de la ville.

L'appartement* de l'empereur était composé de
deux chambres, chacune de quinze pieds de long* sur
douze de large et environ sept de haut : des pièces de
20 nankin, tendues en guise de papier, les garnissaient
toutes deux ; un mauvais tapis en couvrait le
plancher.

Dans la chambre à coucher était le petit lit de
campagne où couchait l'empereur, un canapé, sur
25 lequel il reposait la plus grande partie de la journée,
au milieu des livres dont il était encombré ; à côté,
un petit guéridon sur lequel il déjeunait et dînait
dans son intérieur, et qui, le soir, portait un Chan-
delier à trois branches recouvert d'un grand abat-
30 jour.*

Entre les deux fenêtres, et à l'opposite de la porte, était une commode contenant le linge de l'empereur, et sur laquelle était son grand nécessaire.

La cheminée, surmontée d'une fort petite glace, 5 était ornée de plusieurs tableaux. A droite était le portrait du roi de Rome,* à cheval sur un mouton ; à gauche, et en pendant, était un autre portrait du roi de Rome, assis sur un coussin et essayant une pantoufle ; au milieu de la cheminée était un buste 10 en marbre du même enfant royal ; deux chandeliers, deux flacons et deux tasses de vermeil, tirés du nécessaire de l'empereur, complétaient la garniture de la cheminée

Enfin, auprès du canapé, et précisément en face 15 de l'empereur quand il y reposait étendu, était le portrait de Marie-Louise,* tenant son fils entre ses bras, peint par Isabey.

En outre, sur la gauche de la cheminée, et en dehors des portraits, était la grosse montre d'argent 20 du grand Frédéric,* espèce de réveille-matin pris à Postdam, et, en regard, la propre montre de l'empereur, celle qui avait sonné l'heure de Marengo* et d'Austerlitz,* recouverte en or des deux côtés, et portant la lettre B. 25

La seconde pièce, servant de cabinet, n'avait pour tout meuble que des planches brutes, posées sur de simples tréteaux, supportant un bon nombre de livres épars et les divers chapitres écrits par chacun des généraux ou secrétaires sous la dictée de 30

l'empereur, ensuite, entre les deux fenêtres, une armoire en forme de bibliothèque. à l'opposite, un lit, semblable au premier, et sur lequel l'empereur reposait parfois le jour et se couchait même la nuit, 5 après avoir quitté le premier dans ses fréquentes et longues insomnies : enfin, dans le milieu, était la table de travail.

Tel était le palais de l'homme qui avait tour à tour habité les Tuileries,* le Kremlin* et l'Escorial.* 10 Cependant, malgré la chaleur du jour, malgré l'humidité du soir, malgré l'absence des choses les plus nécessaires à la vie, l'empereur eût supporté avec patience toutes ces privations, si l'on n'avait pris à tâche de le traiter non seulement comme 15 prisonnier dans l'île, mais encore comme prisonnier dans sa maison. On avait décidé, nous l'avons déjà dit, que, lorsque Napoléon monterait à cheval, un officier l'accompagnerait toujours : Napoléon avait pris le parti de ne plus sortir. Alors sa constance 20 avait lassé ses geôliers, et on avait levé cette consigne,* pourvu qu'il demeurât dans certaines limites ; mais, dans ces limites, il était enfermé par un cercle de sentinelles. Un jour, une de ces sentinelles* coucha l'empereur en joue, et le général 25 Gourgaud lui arracha son fusil au moment où probablement elle allait faire feu. Cette enceinte ne permettait guère, au reste, qu'une demi-lieue de course, et, comme l'empereur ne voulait pas la dépasser, pour s'épargner la compagnie de son 30 gardien, il prolongeait sa promenade en descendant,

par des chemins à peine frayés, dans des ravins profonds où il est incroyable qu'il ne se soit pas dix fois précipité.

Malgré ce changement dans ses habitudes, la santé de l'empereur se maintint assez bonne pendant les six premiers mois.

Mais, l'hiver suivant, le temps étant devenu constamment mauvais, l'humidité et la pluie ayant envahi les appartements de carton qu'il habitait, il commença à éprouver de fréquentes indispositions, qui se manifestaient par des lourdeurs et des engourdissements. Au reste, Napoléon n'ignorait pas que l'air était des plus insalubres, et qu'il était rare de rencontrer dans l'île une personne ayant atteint l'âge de cinquante ans 15

Sur ces entrefaites,* un nouveau gouverneur arriva et fut présenté par l'amiral à l'empereur : c'était un homme d'environ quarante-cinq ans, d'une taille commune, mince, maigre, sec, rouge de visage et de chevelure, marqueté de taches de rousseur, avec des yeux obliques, se fixant à la dérobée, ne regardant que rarement en face, et recouverts de sourcils d'un blond ardent, épais et fort proéminents. Il se nommait sir Hudson Lowe.* 25

Dès lors, l'existence de Napoléon n'est plus qu'une lente et pénible agonie, qui cependant dure cinq ans. Enfin, le 20 mars 1821, jour du glorieux anniversaire de la rentrée de Napoléon à Paris, Napoléon éprouva, dès le matin, une forte 30

oppression à l'estomac et une sorte de suffocation fatigante à la poitrine, bientôt une douleur aigue se fit sentir. Malgré les premiers remèdes, la fièvre continua. Vers cinq heures de l'après-midi, 5 il y eut un redoublement, accompagné d'un froid glacial, surtout aux extrémités inférieures, et le malade se plaignit de crampes.

La nuit qui suivit fut agitée, les symptômes devinrent de plus en plus graves. Une consulta- 10 tion eut lieu alors, presque malgré l'empereur, entre le docteur Antomarchi* et M. Arnott, chirurgien du 20^e régiment en garnison dans l'île. Ces messieurs reconnurent la nécessité d'appliquer un large vésicatoire sur la région abdominale, 15 d'administrer un purgatif, et de verser d'heure en heure du vinaigre sur le front du malade. La maladie ne continua pas moins de faire des progrès rapides.

Un soir, un domestique de Longwood dit qu'il 20 avait vu une comète : Napoléon l'entendit, et ce présage le frappa.

— Une comète* ! s'écria-t-il, ce fut le signe précurseur de la mort de César.

Le 11 avril, le froid aux pieds devint excessif. 25 Le docteur essaya des fomentations pour le dissiper.

— Tout cela est inutile, lui dit Napoléon ; ce n'est point là, c'est à l'estomac, c'est au foie, qu'est le mal : vous n'avez point de remède contre l'ardeur qui me brûle, point de préparation, point de 30 médicaments pour calmer le feu dont je suis dévoré.

Le 15 avril, il commença à rédiger son testament, et, ce jour-là, l'entrée de sa chambre fut interdite à tout le monde, excepté à Marchand et au général Montholon, qui restèrent avec lui depuis une heure et demie jusqu'à six heures du soir. 5

À six heures, le docteur entra : Napoléon lui montra son testament commencé et chaque pièce de son nécessaire étiquetée du nom de la personne à laquelle elle était destinée

— Vous voyez, lui dit-il, je fais mes apprêts 10 pour m'en aller.

Le docteur voulut le rassurer ; Napoléon l'arrêta.

— Plus d'illusion, ajouta-t-il ; je sais ce qu'il en est,* et je suis résigné.

Le 19 amena un mieux sensible qui rendit 15 l'espérance à tout le monde, excepté à Napoléon. Chacun se félicitait de ce changement ; Napoléon laissa dire ; puis, en souriant :

— Vous ne vous trompez pas, je vais mieux aujourd'hui, mais je n'en sens pas moins que ma fin 20 approche. Quand je serai* mort, chacun de vous aura la douce consolation de retourner en Europe. Vous reverrez les uns vos parents, les autres vos amis. Moi, je retrouverai mes braves au ciel. .

Oui, oui, ajouta-t-il en s'animant et en élevant la 25 voix avec un accent inspiré, oui, Kléber,* Desaix,* Bessièrès,* Duroc,* Ney,* Murat,* Masséna,* Berthier,* viendront à ma rencontre. Ils me parleront de ce que nous avons fait ensemble, je leur conterai les derniers événements de ma vie. en me re- 30

voyant, ils redeviendront tous fous d'enthousiasme et de gloire. Nous causerons de nos guerres avec les Scipion,* les César, les Annibal, et il y aura plaisir à cela. . . A moins, continua-t-il en
5 souriant, qu'on ne s'effraye là-haut de voir tant de guerriers ensemble.

Quelques jours après, il fit venir son chapelain Vignali.

— Je suis né dans la religion catholique, lui
10 dit-il, je veux remplir les devoirs qu'elle impose et recevoir les sacrements qu'elle administre.

Après le prêtre, vint le tour du médecin

— Mon cher docteur, lui dit-il, après ma mort, qui ne saurait être* éloignée, je veux que vous
15 fassiez l'ouverture de mon cadavre, mais j'exige qu'aucun médecin anglais ne mette la main sur moi. Je souhaite que vous preniez mon cœur, que vous le mettiez dans de l'esprit-de-vin, et que vous le portiez à ma chère Marie-Louise : vous
20 lui direz que je l'ai tendrement aimée, et que je n'ai jamais cessé de l'aimer ; vous lui raconterez tout ce que j'ai souffert ; vous lui direz tout ce que vous avez vu ; vous entrerez dans tous les détails de ma mort. Je vous recommande surtout de
25 bien examiner mon estomac, et d'en faire un rapport précis et détaillé que vous remettrez à mon fils. Puis, de Vienne,* vous vous rendrez à Rome. vous irez trouver ma mère,* ma famille ; vous leur rapporterez ce que vous avez observé
30 relativement à ma situation ; vous leur direz que

Napoléon, celui-là même que le monde a appelé le Grand, comme Charlemagne et comme Pompée, est mort dans l'état le plus déplorable, manquant de tout, abandonné à lui-même et à sa gloire. Vous leur direz qu'en expirant, il lègue à toutes les familles régnantes l'horreur et l'opprobre de ses derniers moments.

Le 2 mai, la fièvre arriva au plus haut degré d'intensité qu'elle eût encore atteint, le pouls donna jusqu'à cent pulsations à la minute, et l'empereur eut le délire.

La nuit fut assez bonne, mais, le lendemain, au matin, le délire reparut avec une nouvelle force. Cependant, vers les huit heures, il perdit un peu de son intensité, vers trois heures, le malade reprit sa raison. Il en profita pour appeler les exécuteurs testamentaires, et leur recommanda, dans le cas où il viendrait à perdre complètement connaissance, de ne laisser approcher de lui aucun médecin anglais autre que le docteur Arnott. Puis il ajouta, dans toute la plénitude de sa raison et dans toute la puissance de son génie :

— Je vais mourir; vous allez repasser en Europe; je vous dois quelques conseils sur la conduite que vous avez à tenir. Vous avez partagé mon exil, vous serez fidèles à ma mémoire, vous ne ferez rien qui puisse la blesser. J'ai sanctionné tous les principes, je les ai infusés dans mes lois, dans mes actes; il n'y en a pas un seul que je n'aie consacré.* Malheureusement, les circonstances

étaient graves : j'ai été obligé de sévir, d'ajourner ; les revers sont venus, je n'ai pu débander l'arc,* et la France a été privée des institutions libérales que je lui destinais. Elle me juge avec indulgence, elle
5 me tient compte de mes intentions, elle chérit mon nom, mes victoires ; imitez-la. Soyez fidèles aux opinions que vous avez défendues, à la gloire que nous avons acquise : il n'y a hors de là que honte et confusion.

10 Le 5, au matin, le mal était parvenu à son comble : la vie n'était plus chez le malade qu'une végétation haletante et douloureuse ; la respiration devenait de plus en plus insensible ; les yeux, ouverts dans toute leur grandeur, étaient fixes et atones.
15 Quelques paroles vagues, dernière ébullition de son cerveau en délire, venaient de temps en temps mourir sur ses lèvres. Les derniers mots que l'on entendit furent ceux de *tête* et d'*armée*. Puis la voix s'éteignit, toute intelligence parut morte, et le
20 docteur lui-même crut que le principe de la vie était éteint. Cependant, vers les huit heures, le poulx* se releva ; le ressort mortel qui fermait la bouche du moribond sembla se détendre, et quelques soupirs profonds et suprêmes s'exhalèrent de sa poitrine.
25 A dix heures et demie, le poulx était anéanti ; à onze heures et quelques minutes, l'empereur avait vécu. . . .

Vingt heures après la mort de son illustre malade, le docteur Antomarchi procéda à son ouver-
30 ture,* ainsi que Napoléon le lui avait si souvent

recommandé: puis il détacha le cœur, qu'il mit, selon les instructions reçues, dans de l'esprit-de-vin, afin de le rendre à Marie-Louise. Mais, en ce moment, les exécuteurs testamentaires survinrent avec le refus de sir Hudson Lowe de laisser sortir 5 de Sainte-Hélène non seulement le corps, mais aucune partie du corps. Il devait rester dans l'île. Le cadavre était cloué à l'échafaud.

On s'occupa dès lors de choisir la place de la sépulture de l'empereur, et la préférence fut donnée 10 à un lieu que Napoléon n'avait vu qu'une fois, mais dont il parlait toujours avec complaisance: sir Hudson Lowe consentit à ce que la tombe fût creusée en cet endroit.

L'autopsie terminée, le docteur Antomarchi 15 réunit par une suture les parties séparées, lava le corps et l'abandonna au valet de chambre, qui le revêtit du costume que l'empereur avait l'habitude de porter, c'est-à-dire d'une culotte de casimir blanc, de bas de soie blancs, de longues bottes à l'écuyère 20 avec de petits éperons, d'un gilet blanc, d'une cravate blanche recouverte d'une cravate noire bouclée par derrière, du grand cordon de la Légion d'honneur,* de l'habit de colonel des chasseurs de la garde décoré des ordres de la Légion d'honneur et de la 25 Couronne de fer,* enfin du chapeau à trois cornes. Ainsi vêtu, Napoléon fut enlevé de la salle le 6 mai,* à cinq heures trois quarts, et exposé dans la petite chambre à coucher, que l'on avait convertie en chapelle ardente.* Le cadavre avait les mains 30

libres, il était étendu sur son lit de campagne ; son épée était à son côté, un crucifix* reposait sur sa poitrine, et le manteau bleu de Marengo était jeté sur ses pieds. Il resta ainsi exposé pendant 5 deux jours

Le 8 au matin, le corps de l'empereur, qui devait reposer sous la colonne, et le cœur, qui devait être envoyé à Marie-Louise, furent déposés dans une caisse de fer-blanc, garnie d'une espèce de matelas 10 et d'un oreiller recouverts de satin blanc. Le chapeau ne pouvant, faute d'espace, rester à la tête du mort,* fut placé à ses pieds. Autour de lui, on sema des aigles et des pièces de toutes les monnaies frappées à son effigie pendant le cours de son règne, 15 on y déposa encore son couvert, son couteau et une assiette à ses armes.* Cette première caisse fut enfermée dans une seconde caisse en acajou, que l'on mit dans une troisième en plomb, laquelle fut enfin placée dans une quatrième caisse en acajou, pareille 20 à la seconde, mais de plus grande dimension ; puis on exposa le cercueil à la même place où avait été exposé le corps.

A midi et demi, le cercueil fut transporté par les soldats de la garnison dans la grande allée du 25 jardin, où le corbillard attendait : on le couvrit d'un velours violet, sur lequel on jeta le manteau de Marengo,* et le cortège funèbre se mit en route.

La tombe était creusée à un quart de mille, à 30 peu près, au delà de Hut's-Gate. Le corbillard

s'arrêta près de la fosse, et le canon commença à tirer cinq coups par minute.

Le corps fut descendu dans la tombe pendant que l'abbé Vignali disait les prières, ses pieds tournés vers l'Orient, qu'il avait conquis, sa tête 5 tournée vers l'Occident, où il avait régné. Puis une énorme pierre, qui devait servir à la nouvelle maison de l'empereur, scella sa demeure dernière.

Alors on apporta une plaque d'argent sur laquelle était gravée l'inscription suivante : 10

NAPOLÉON

NÉ A AJACCIO, LE 15 AOÛT 1769

MORT A SAINTE-HELENE, LE 5 MAI 1821

Mais, au moment où on allait la clouer sur la pierre, sir Hudson Lowe s'avança et déclara, au nom 15 de son gouvernement, que l'on ne pouvait mettre sur la tombe* d'autre inscription que celle-ci :

LE GÉNÉRAL BUONAPARTE.

NOTES

Page LINE

1. 1. Elbe, 'Elba,' an island in the Mediterranean between Corsica and Tuscany.
- „ 4. un petit écu, 'three francs,' i.e. about half a crown. *Écu*, 'a cavalry shield,' and then 'a heraldic shield,' was applied by analogy to a silver coin which had on one side three *fleurs de lis*.
- „ 6. aussi . . . avait-il . . . , 'so . . . he had . . .' In sentences beginning with *aussi* ('so'), *à peine*, *peut-être*, *du moins*, *au moins*, *encore*, the same construction is used as in questions. Cf. p. 10 l. 18 and p. 17 l. 5.
- „ 10 fut: notice that the past definite is used in narrative when speaking of successive events; the imperfect gives the background over which the narrator lingers, e.g. in l. 1 *Napoléon était roi*, and cf. the tenses used in ll. 14, 16, 17, 18 of p. 2.
- „ 11. mouiller, 'to wet'; *mouiller l'ancre*, or by ellipsis *mouiller*, 'to cast anchor.'
- „ 12. Porto-Ferraïo: the capital of Elba.
- „ 13. le soir même, 'that very evening'; *le même soir*, 'the same evening.'
2. 1. lendemain is an example of what is called 'agglutination' of the article. In OF. they said *l'endemann*, and then another article was added. Cf. *le tierre*, OF. *l'ierre* (Lat. *hedera*), 'ivy,' and in Engl. 'a newt' for 'an ewt.'
- „ 6. le tour (Lat. *tornum*), 'lathe,' 'truck,' 'turn,' is to be distinguished from *la tour* (Lat. *turrim*), 'tower.'
- „ 9. au moment où . . . : note the use of *où* instead of *quand* after a noun denoting time

Page LINE

2. 15. A short time before this the inhabitants of the island, had burnt Napoleon in effigy as the author of all France's troubles.
 notables, 'principal inhabitants'
- „ 19. **tout** is an adverb here and does not agree, though it would take an *e* for euphony's sake if the following word began with a consonant or aspirated *h*; see p. 13 l. 4 *avec des intentions toutes pacifiques*.
- „ 27. **servir de**, 'to serve as'; *se servir de*, 'to use.'
- „ 29. **Dalesme** had been governor of Elba until Napoleon's arrival
- „ 30. **suyvante**: verbal adjectives agree like other adjectives, but present participles are invariable; e.g. p. 23 l. 25 *la foule et l'enthousiasme vont toujours augmentant*, also p. 40 l. 26.
3. 7. Abstract nouns in **eur** are feminine. Exceptions. *bonheur, malheur, honneur, déshonneur, labeur*.
- „ 11. **la propriété** (Lat. *proprietatem*), 'property,' to be distinguished from *la propreté*, 'cleanliness'
- „ 13. **aux habitants**: notice the dative See note, p. 35 l. 22, where the instance is still clearer
- „ 25. **quelque** *que* in sense of 'however' or 'whatever' always takes the subjunctive.
- „ 28. **grenadiers**: these belonged to the detachment of the old guard which the treaty of Fontainebleau allowed him.
4. 17. **bourgeoise**, 'private.' This word, whether as noun or adjective, requires careful translation; see note, p. 23 l. 12.
- „ 20. **bastion**: the only noun in *-tion* that is masculine.
- „ 22. **de sorte que** takes the indicative in speaking of a result already achieved, or about the achievement of which there is no doubt, but the subjunctive in speaking of an aim still to be attained; e.g. *tenez-vous là, de sorte qu'il ne puisse s'échapper*.
- „ 26. **chaumière**: originally a thatched cottage (*le chaume* = 'straw'), now used of any cottage
 qu'il avait fait reconstruire: the past participle *fait* is always invariable when followed by an infinitive.
- „ 28. **but**, 'aim' or 'goal,' is another form of *bout*, 'end,' in a palpable sense.

Page LINE

5. 6. **mémoire** is here masculine, and means 'memoir.' 'Memory' is *la mémoire*. Napoleon had promised the Old Guard at Fontainebleau 'd'écrire les grandes choses que nous avons faites ensemble,' but not much was written until St. Helena.
- „ 10. **garde** (la), 'the guard' (collectively), 'protection', *le garde*, 'the guard,' 'keeper.'
- vers **les onze heures**: in such expressions the article may be omitted, *vers onze heures*; but with *sur* it must be used, *sur les onze heures*.
- „ 15. Notice the difference between **à** and **en**, and cf. *à Londres*, but *en Angleterre*.
- grand maréchal du Palais** was the full title: 'grand-marshal.'
- „ 21. **sa sœur**, the widow of General Leclerc, had married Prince Borghèse. General Leclerc was sent in 1802 to suppress the insurrection in St. Domingo, headed by the negro Toussaint l'Ouverture, and had died of yellow fever before the island capitulated to the English.
29. **ne s'habituât**: verbs of doubting, when used negatively, take **ne** before the verb in the dependent clause which follows, and always require the subjunctive.
6. 5. **habitait**: the imperfect must be translated by the pluperfect in English when the action of the verb is still continued at the time spoken of. Similarly the French use the present for the English perfect; e.g. *je suis ici depuis une semaine*, 'I have been here a week.'
- „ 7. **venait de**, 'had just', *je viens de*, 'I have just'; *se je viens à*, 'if I happen to'
- „ 8. **Talleyrand** [1754-1838], Bishop of Autun, was a member of the Constituent Assembly (see p. xxviii.), and in 1797 one of the ministers of the Directory (see p. xxx.). Under the Consulate and Empire he was Minister for Foreign Affairs. Afterwards, falling into disgrace, he intrigued for the return of the Bourbons, and was a member of the Provisional Government that recalled them in 1814. After Waterloo he was again for a short time Minister for Foreign Affairs. Under Louis Philippe he was French Ambassador in London.
- „ 9. The Congress of Vienna met in 1814 to settle the affairs of Europe. Talleyrand, on behalf of Louis XVIII.,

Page LINE

- asked that Napoleon might be removed to a greater distance from France.
- 6 10. *faisait remarquer que . .*, 'called attention to the fact that . .'
- „ 13. **Murat**. Joachim Murat [1771-1815] was the son of an inn-keeper, who raised himself by his military talent during the Napoleonic wars. He married Caroline Bonaparte, and was placed by his brother-in-law on the throne of Naples (1808). After the Hundred Days he was expelled, and while attempting to return was taken and shot.
- „ 15. The provinces of Upper Italy were at this time split up. Austria was to have the Venetian provinces and Lombardy as far as the Ticino; Genoa was to be given to the kingdom of Sardinia.
- „ 18. **Fontainebleau**: the country-palace of the kings of France, 37 miles S.E. of Paris on the way to Lyon. Napoleon signed his abdication there in 1814.
- „ 26. *l'on*: the *l* here is really the article (*on* is Latin *homo*) and for euphony is used before *on* after *si*, *et*, *ou*, *où*, *qui*, *que*, *quoi*, and sometimes at the beginning of a sentence unless the following word begins with *l*, e.g. p. 24 l. 10 *où on l'attend le moins*.
- dans laquelle se trouvaient impliqués**: the order is generally inverted in an adjectival clause when the subject is longer than the verb.
7. 4. *il serait fait des ouvertures . i.e. des ouvertures seraient faites*.
- „ 9. **Malte**: Malta had belonged to the English since 1800 (see pp. xxxvi., xlii., xliii.).
- „ 12. **Sainte-Hélène**: a lonely island on the SW. coast of Africa. Notice the French form of the name.
- „ 15. Why is *permet* subjunctive?
- „ 16. *faites*: the past participle always agrees when used as an adjective.
8. 1. **les plus maltraités**: this is the relative superlative where the comparison is between two or more objects. When the comparison is between different states of the same object or objects, the article remains unaltered; e.g. *elle est la plus heureuse lorsqu'elle est seule*.
- „ 4. **le peuple**: among the causes which early set the French people against Louis XVIII. was his dating his charter of 1814 as the nineteenth year of the king's

Page LINE

- reign, thus setting aside the work of the Revolution and the triumphs of the Empire.
- 8 5. l'armée the army was offended by the treatment of Napoleon's old soldiers, who were disbanded on the ground of economy at the very time when the antiquated and expensive military household of the ancient régime was revived to provide places for the *émigrés*.
- , 8. The first Bourbon king was Henri IV. (1589). Their representative in 1902 is Louis-Philippe, Duke of Orleans, who combines the claims of the Bourbons and the House of Orleans.
- , 10. qu'avaient soulevée l'impéritie et l'imprévoyance : see second note, p. 6 l. 26.
- , 17 de : after *plus* or *moins* use *de* instead of *que* before cardinal numbers for 'than' unless comparison is expressed ; e.g. *il a mangé plus de deux poulets*, but *il a mangé plus que deux hommes*
- , 19. préparatifs, 'preparations', but we should say *la préparation à la mort*.
- , 21. chargé de, 'whose business it was to' ; as a matter of fact Campbell had remained on the island at Napoleon's request until February 16, when he went on a week's holiday to Florence ; so ll. 6-15 p. 10 are not correct.
- de temps à autre : same meaning as *de temps en temps*.
- , 28. donner le change, 'to put on the wrong scent.'
9. 6. des vases · *le vase* = 'the vase,' *la vase* = 'the mine.'
- , 12. au : for the case see note, p. 35 l. 22.
- , 13. chebec. a Mediterranean boat with three masts, on which oars are used as well as sails.
- , 15. Barbarie. the district north of Africa, comprising Morocco, Algeria, Tunis, and Tripoli—originally inhabited by the Berbers.
- , 16. la croisière, 'a fleet of cruisers' ; 'a cruiser' is *un croiseur*.
- , 23. les Polonais : a detachment of the Polish Light Horse, after being dismissed from the French army, had been allowed to accompany Napoleon to Elba.
10. 6. sa frégate · this frigate was really the *Partridge*, under Captain Adye. Campbell was not on board.
- , 8. attendre que : note (1) the use of *que* instead of *jusqu'à ce que*, (2) the subjunctive.

Page LINE

10. 16. *souhaiter* . notice the distinction between this verb and *vouloir*.
- „ 18 *à peine le colonel était-il sorti* . for the inversion see note, p. 1 l. 6
- „ 19. *le grand maréchal* : i.e. Bertrand
- „ 30. *cingler*, 'to sail,' derived from Scandinavian *sigla*,* 'a ship'; *cingler* 'to lash' is from Latin *cingulum*.
vers denotes direction towards persons or places; *envers* denotes acts or feelings towards persons.
11. 1. *la lunette*, 'glass,' 'telescope'; in the plural, 'spectacles' or 'blinkers of a horse.'
- „ 7. *embargo* : a Spanish word for the orders issued by a state, forbidding the foreign vessels in its harbours to leave.
- „ 15. *que l'on* . see first note, p. 6 l. 26.
12. 6. *la générale* was the beating of the drum to sound the general assembly.
- „ 7. *lui* : notice that *succéder* takes a dative: 'to be successful' is *reussir*.
- „ 10 *au nom de la France* : but *en mon nom, en son nom*, etc.
- „ 27 *la voile* . from Lat. *vela*. As the plural *vela*, in the sense of 'sails,' was generally used during the growth of the French language, *vela* was looked upon as a feminine noun of the 1st declension, like many other neuter plurals; e.g. *une arme* (Lat. *arma*), *la joie* (Lat. *gaudia*). *Le voile* is derived from the singular *velum*, which meant in Latin both 'veil' and 'sail.'
13. 7. *une lieue* : the French league is 4850 yards, or, roughly, $2\frac{1}{2}$ to $2\frac{3}{4}$ miles.
- „ 10. *eut éclairé* . the past anterior is used after *quand, aussitôt que, lorsque, après que*, when the verb in the principal sentence is in the past definite.
- „ 23. *eût été* : it is only with the pluperfect that *si* may take the subjunctive.
- „ 28. *sous le vent*, 'to leeward.'
14. 3. *il n'y avait plus à . .*, 'it was too late to
- „ 18. *d'emblée*, 'at the first blow'; *embler* (Lat. *involare*) means 'to ravish in flying.'
- „ 26. *le pont*, 'the deck'; the bridge of a ship is *la passerelle*.

Page LINE

14. 29 du soir, 'in the evening'; *du soir* is equivalent to 'p.m.,' *du matin* to 'a.m.'
15. 4 à sa manœuvre, 'by the way it was worked'; *manœuvre* (Lat. *manus, opera*) is masculine when it means 'workman',
5. toutes: a feminine adjective attracts *tout*, even though used adverbially, to its own gender and number unless the adjective begins with a vowel or *h* mute; e.g. *elle était tout étonnée*, but *elle était toute surprise*, and see p. 2 l. 19 and note.
- „ 8. tout en . ., 'whilst . .'
- „ 21. à merveille! 'wonderfully well'
- „ 29. Bastia: ancient capital of Corsica on the NE coast.
16. 5. mettre au net, 'to make a fair copy of.' *Net* is properly an adjective, 'neat,' 'clean,' 'clear'; *les mains nettes*, 'empty-handed.'
- „ 6. ne les put déchiffrer: it is more usual now to put the pronoun between the two verbs. *ne put les déchiffrer*.
- „ 12. Antibes a small town on the Riviera, a little west of Mentone.
- 17 5. proposèrent-ils. see note, p. 1 l. 6.
- „ 7. prévenir, 'to forestall' It also means 'to prevent,' 'inform,' 'forewarn', *prévenir contre*, 'to prejudice against.'
- „ 14 Grasse: a small town SW. of Nice, famous for its flowers, cultivated mainly for the manufacture of scents.
- „ 15. hauteur: this height is still called by the country-people "Le plateau de Napoléon."
- „ 20. eût fait the pluperfect subjunctive is often used for the past conditional.
- „ 22. une route: one of the greatest benefits conferred on France by Napoleon was the system of roads. Of these the Simplon Road from Brigue to Domodossola, joining Italy and France, is a splendid example.
- „ 27. Napoleon avoided military stations and great cities. The mountainous Dauphiné, through which he made his way, had remained true to the Revolution and attached to the Empire.

Page LINE

- 17 28. *vingt lieues*. Dumas is following Napoleon's own account. The distance is really nearer 30 than 50 miles—quite enough for a day's march; but Napoleon is never satisfied with 'enough.'
- 18 2. *proclamations*: see p. 16 l. 4.
- „ 10. *opérât*: subjunctive after a verb expressing a desire.
- „ 12. *la Mure et Vizille*: towns not very far from Grenoble.
le général Cambronne: supposed to have answered at Waterloo, when summoned to surrender, 'La gaide meurt et ne se rend pas.'
- „ 19. *procurée*: the past participle agrees with the direct object *que*, which precedes the principal part of the verb. What case is the reflexive pronoun here?
- „ 25. *la partie*, 'the game,' also 'the part' (of a whole); e.g. *une partie de cet argent lui appartient*. *Le parti* = 'the party,' 'way,' 'means.'
- „ 28. *droite*: *main* is understood.
de trente pas de large à peine, 'scarcely thirty paces broad'; cf. *de haut, de long*.
19. 3. *Bertrand* is famous for his fidelity to Napoleon, whom he accompanied to St. Helena. Unlike the other sharers of his master's captivity he has left no memoirs, and his reputation has gained by this loyal silence.
- „ 4. *aux mains*: in speaking of parts of the body the possessive adjective is replaced by the definite article in French, the dative of the personal or reflexive pronoun being prefixed to the verb when it is necessary to point out whose limbs, etc., are affected; cf. l. 23 *lui baisent les mains*.
- „ 5. *n'importe*, 'never mind'. Notice the omission of *pas*.
- „ 10. *Marchand* had served under Napoleon with success. In 1814 he had gone over to the Bourbons, and his readiness to do so had alienated from him the good will of the soldiers, though it had gained him the command of Grenoble, where he was at this time.
- „ 11. *faire feu*, 'to fire'; *faire long feu*, 'to hang fire'; *faire du feu*, 'to make a fire.'
- „ 14. *veuille*: a subjunctive is used after a relative denoting a consequence when the verb of the principal clause, either by its mood or its meaning, admits of a contingent result in the subordinate clause.

Page LINE

19. 20. *tandis que*, 'whilst,' often denotes opposition; *pendant que* is used exclusively of time.
- „ 28. *précéder*, like *suir*, *accompagner*, is followed in the passive by the preposition *de*.
- 20 2. *une demi-lieue*. notice that *demi* does not take the sign of the feminine when it precedes, but does when it follows the noun; see p. 31 l. 12 *une lieue et demie*. It is now, however, decreed (Decree of the French Minister for Public Instruction, February 26, 1901) that *nu*, *demi*, *feu* may agree with the substantive which they precede.
- „ 6. *leur*: *échapper* takes a dative.
- „ 18. *au-devant de lui*: not 'in front of him,' but 'to meet him.'
- „ 25. The Greek who bore the news of the victory at Marathon to Athens was Pheidippides; see R. Browning's *Pheidippides*.
- „ 28. *La Bédoyère*, one of the most brilliant of Napoleon's younger officers, aide-de-camp to Lannes and Prince Eugène, had for long been dissatisfied with the Bourbon rule, and returned without hesitation to his old allegiance.
21. 3. *un tambour*, 'drummer,' or 'drum'; *tambour battant*, fig. 'sharply,' 'off-hand.'
- „ 4. *casse* is here used of a drum by Dumas, who follows the legend that the 'eagle' was produced from a drum. As a matter of fact, it was in a box (for which also the French is *casse*) that the eagle was kept. In the course of his trial Labédoyère said that this 'eagle' had been preserved by the regiment as a relic, and that its presence was no proof that his defection was deliberate.
- „ 5. *une aigle*, 'ensign,' or 'eagle,' in heraldry, or 'military standard.' Except when used in that sense the word is *masculine*.
- „ 18. *pique*, 'spurs'; lit. 'pricks,' 'stings'; *piquer une tête*, 'to take a header'; *piquer des deux*, 'to start at full gallop.'
- 22 4. *la vie*: *La Bédoyère* was shot on the return of the Bourbons.
- „ 11. *le commandant* was Marchand.
- „ 14. *d'une voix*, 'in a voice'; cf. *d'une façon*, *d'un air*

Page LINE

- 22 15. Notice le héros, but *l'héroïne* The best way of remembering this is to know the reason. Unless the *h* of héros were aspirated the plural *les héros* could not be distinguished from *les zéros*
- .. 16. *c'est à vous de*, 'it is your duty or privilege, to . .'
c'est à vous à, 'it is your turn to . .'
- .. 26. *tout*: see note, p. 2 l. 19.
30. Notice *mille*, 'a thousand,' never takes *s* in the plural: *mille* does not come from Latin *mille*, which gives the Fr. *mil* (cf. *il* from *ille*), but from the plural *millia*. In Old French *mil* was used for one thousand objects, e.g. *mil hommes*, and *mille* for several thousands, e.g. *deux mille hommes*. This distinction was afterwards lost sight of, but it explains why *mil* is still used in dates, and why *mille* has no plural when meaning thousand. According to the Decree referred to in note, p. 20 l. 2, *mille* will be accepted instead of *mil* in dates of the Christian era, as in ordinary numbers, e.g. *l'an mil huit cent quatre vingt dix*, or *l'an mille huit cents quatre vings dix*
23. 12. *soldats, bourgeois et paysans*: the article is often omitted in enumerations. *Bourgeois*, here best translated 'townsmen,' the representatives of the middle class, it is sometimes used as a term of reproach, when it suggests a 'philistine.'
- .. 18. *la capitale*, 'Grenoble.' Humbert II., Dauphin of Vienne, ceded his domains to Philip VI. on behalf of his grandson, who, on succeeding to the throne as Charles V (1364), ordered that the title of Dauphin should be henceforward borne by the heir apparent; cf. the origin of our 'Prince of Wales'
- .. 19. The King of Naples was Murat, Napoleon's brother-in-law, to whom the Congress of Vienna had left his possessions as a reward for his desertion of Napoleon. This, however, did not satisfy him, and after intriguing with Napoleon in Elba, he openly espoused his cause after his first success. The Austrians defeated him at Tolentino and gave his throne back to Ferdinand IV. (see note, p. 6 l. 13).
- .. 25. *Lyon and Marseille* appear in English as 'Lyons' and 'Marseilles.'
- .. 26. *augmentant*: see note, p. 2 l. 30.

Page LINE

23. 29. **le duc d'Orléans**, son of Philippe Égalité (see p. xxix.), was king of the French as Louis Philippe from 1830 until the Republic in 1848. The dukes of Orleans were descended from the younger son of Louis XIII.
- le comte d'Artois** was brother of Louis XVI. and Louis XVIII. He reigned as Charles X. from 1824-30.
- „ 30. **Macdonald**, descended from a Scotch family, entered the French army in 1784, and served everywhere with distinction; famous for his crossing of the Splügen in 1800. After the second fall of Napoleon he took little part in politics, and died in Paris in 1840
24. 1 **The bridge Morand** was named after a famous architect who built it. For defending Lyon against the forces of the Convention he perished on the scaffold in 1794.
- la Guillotière** . a suburb of Lyon on the left bank of the Rhône.
- „ 10 **où on l'attend** : see first note, p. 6 l. 26.
- „ 16. **au bout d'un quart d'heure** notice that at the beginning of a sentence 'after' is translated by *au bout de*, *après* is put after the noun, e.g. *quelques jours après*.
25. 3. **préfet**, 'prefect.' We have no corresponding official in England. A prefect, always appointed by the central government, is the chief functionary in every *département*. The office was established by Napoleon.
- „ 5. **Michel Ney** rose from the ranks, by his bravery at Borodino (1812), and during the retreat from Moscow he earned the title of *le brave des braves* (see l. 9). He abandoned Napoleon in 1814, and when he took leave of Louis XVIII. on this occasion he said, 'Sire, j'espère venir à bout de le (Napoleon) ramener dans une cage de fer.' And no doubt he meant to, but the impossibility of persuading his soldiers to fire on his and their old chief was too much for him. At Waterloo, where he commanded the old guard, he had five horses shot under him. He was captured, and after a trial before the peers of France, in spite of the fact that the allies on entering Paris guaranteed a general pardon, was shot as a traitor.
- „ 13. **de terribles souvenirs**: it was at Fontainebleau that Napoleon attempted to commit suicide by swallowing poison when the allies were deliberating on his fate in 1814, and it was here that he signed his abdication.

Page LINT

25. 24. Tuileries . the palace of the kings of France, originally built for Catherine de Médicis on the site of some tile-works ('tile' = *la tuile*). It was burnt during the Commune in 1871. Shortly before Napoleon's arrival the king and royal family had left the palace under cover of darkness, taking with them all the money and jewels they could carry. After a short stay at Lille they went to Ghent, where they remained during Napoleon's brief second reign.
26. 8. **gens** is treated as masculine, except when an adjective precedes it which has not the same form for both genders, e.g. *des gens grossiers*; *tous ces braves gens*, but *toutes les bonnes gens*. However, note Decree, Feb. 26, 1901: 'In all cases the adjective qualifying *gens* may be made feminine.'
- „ 12 **les grands corps**, 'the estates.'
- „ 17. **en un jour**: notice the distinction between *en* and *dans* when used with words denoting a period of time—*en* implies the time taken to do a thing, *dans* the point of time by or at which it will be done.
- „ 28. **parti**, 'course.' *Un parti* means (1) 'political party', (2) 'part,' e.g. *prendre le parti de quelqu'un*; (3) 'resolution,' 'course,' as here. For *une partie* see note, p. 18 l. 25.
- „ 29. **c'est donner** . . . notice this redundant use of *ce* before *être* between two infinitives, and cf. *vouloir*, *c'est pouvoir*, 'where there's a will, there's a way.'
27. 12. **la Vendée**: a district in the W. of France, where civil war broke out first after the fall of the monarchy (see V. Hugo's '1793'). On this occasion the attempt to rouse the Royalists failed.
- le duc d'Angoulême was the son of the Count of Artois, and so nephew of Louis XVIII.
- Marseille was one of the last towns to desert the cause of Louis XVIII.
- „ 16 **Châtillon**: a congress of the allies had met here in 1814 (see p. lx.).
- „ 22. In this circular letter Napoleon alleges that he has been recalled by the voice of France, already weary of the Bourbons, and calling for a liberator.
- „ 24. le **congrès** refers to the Congress of Vienna, which had not yet separated (see note, p. 6 l. 9).

Page LINF

27. 24 *et qu'on eût pu*: the simple conjunction *que* is used to avoid the repetition of *si*, but it must take the subjunctive even though the *si* in the first clause has taken the indicative.
28. 7. *les seuls armuriers de la capitale*: for *les armuriers de la capitale seuls*.
- „ 12. *cadre*: lit. 'frame'; here 'skeleton.'
- „ 18. *licenciés*, 'disbanded' after the return of the Bourbons (see note, p. 815).
- „ 26. *du génie*: notice the gender, and cf. *un incendie, un parapluie*.
- „ 30. *la Saxe et Cracovie*: Talleyrand, as the champion of the smaller European states, induced England and Austria to support France in resisting Prussia's attempt to absorb the whole of Saxony, and Russia's wish to extend her empire to the Oder so as to include Cracow.
29. 14. *Cadmus* sowed the teeth of the dragon he had slain, and from them armed men sprang up called 'Sparti,' who killed one another until only five were left. These five were the ancestors of the Thebans.
- „ 22 *ne le peut dompter*: see note, p. 161.6.
- „ 24. *l'acte additionnel aux Constitutions de l'Empire*, really the work of Benjamin Constant, who used the English Constitution as his model, was issued by Napoleon in April 1815. It established two chambers—one hereditary, the other elective—immovable judges, and other guarantees of liberty. It failed in its object of propitiating public opinion from the very first, as it was felt that the power that had promulgated it might withdraw it.
- „ 25. *fédération*: alluding to the National Fête, called La - Fédération, first held on July 14, 1790, the first anniversary of the fall of the Bastille (see p. xxviii.).
champ de mai was the name originally given to old Frankish assemblies in arms, and was for obvious reasons adopted by Napoleon.
- „ 27. *sur l'autel*: Louis XVI. had in the same way taken the oath of fidelity to the new Constitution before an altar in the midst of the Champ de Mars at the Fête de la Fédération.
- „ 28. *du Champ de Mars*: extensive grounds between the Ecole Militaire and the left bank of the Seine. The last four International Exhibitions have been held there.

Page LINE

30 9 (*Lazare*) **Hoche** : son of an ostler. As head of the Republican army in La Vendée (1795) he reduced the Royalists there to submission, commanded the disastrous expedition to Ireland 1796, and was afterwards employed against the Austrians. He died in 1797, the noblest of all the generals of the Revolution.

Kléber, the son of a stonemason, after serving with distinction in La Vendée and on the Rhine, accompanied Napoleon to Egypt and Palestine, and was left to govern Egypt on Napoleon's departure. He was assassinated at Cairo by a Turk in 1800

- , 13. **tout** : what part of speech ? see note, p. 15 l. 5
- „ 24 **un espace** : the only noun in *-ace* that is masculine (Lat. *spatium*).
- „ 28. **trois cents** · *cent* and *vingt* only take an *s* in the plural when they are not followed by another number ; cf. ll. 5 and 11. However, note Decree, Feb. 26, 1901. 'The plural of *vingt* and *cent* will be allowed even when these words are followed by another numeral adjective ; e.g. *quatre vingt* or *quatre vingts dix hommes*, *quatre cent* or *quatre cents trente homme*. The hyphen between the word denoting the units and that denoting the tens will not be insisted on ; e.g. *dix sept*'
- 31. 9. **d'un fer à cheval** · notice the use of *à* to denote destination, and cf. *une tasse à thé*, *un couteau à découper*.
- „ 12. **une lieue et demie** : see note, p. 20 l. 2.
- „ 24. **lord Uxbridge** : the eldest son of the Marquis of Anglesey.
- 32. 4. **sans qu'ils aient** . . . bear in mind this construction.
- „ 7. **des renseignements certains**, 'reliable information.' *De certains renseignements* would mean 'certain (i.e. some) information.'
- „ 25. **Bourmont** and the other deserters joined Blücher's army.
- 33. 2. **dont je ne voulais pas**, 'with whom I wanted to have nothing to do.'
- „ 3. **à votre considération**, 'out of consideration for you' ; cf. *à leur rencontre*, 'to meet them.'
- „ 10. The Republican soldiers in the wars of La Vendée (see note, p. 27 l. 12) were called 'Les Bleus,' on account

Page LINE

- of their blue uniforms In the same way 'Les Blancs' were the supporters of the old Bourbon monarchy, whose flag was white.
33. 15. *à la pointe du jour*: also *au point du jour*, 'at day-break.'
- „ 17. Jérôme Bonaparte, the youngest of Napoleon's brothers, was king of Westphalia from 1807-13 (see p. xlviii.). His grandsons, Victor and Louis, are now the representatives of the family, and have been talked of as claimants to a French monarchy.
- „ 21. *de bonne heure*, 'early'; *à la bonne heure*, 'very good,' 'bravo,' 'well done.'
- „ 28. *s'exécute*: the passive voice is much less used in French than in English. One of the ways of avoiding it is this use of the reflexive verb
34. 1. *plus d'une lieue* see note, p. 81 17.
au delà de, 'beyond'; the opposite is *en deçà de*.
- „ 2 *en retard*: notice *il est tard*, 'it is late'; *il est en retard*, 'he is late.'
- „ 6. *Parse suis*
- „ 15. *un chiffre*, 'a number,' in the sense of 'figure' *Un numéro* expresses the order in which persons or things are placed, e.g. *je demeure au numéro quatre*, 'I live at number 4.' *Un nombre* is used of quantity; e.g. *il a un grand nombre d'amis*
- „ 26. For the position of *Quatre-Bras* and other places see the plan of the Waterloo campaign.
- „ 27. *de*: be careful how you translate.
35. 11. *sur ses derrières*, 'in its rear.'
- „ 22. *lui*: when the verb following *faire* has a direct object, *faire* governs a dative of the person. If the verb is intransitive or transitive without an object, then *faire* itself governs an accusative of the person; e.g. *je le fais boire*, but *je lui fais boire de l'eau*. Cf. p. 9 l. 11 *il faisait faire au brick . . . de fréquents voyages*.
- „ *un à-droite*: ellipse for *un pas à main droite*.
- „ 29. *du côté de*, 'in the direction of.'
36. 7. *jonction*: between Wellington's and Blücher's troops.
- „ 8. *un nouveau plan à faire*: cf. *une maison à louer*, 'a house to be let.'
- „ 12. *au canon*, 'at the sound of the cannon.'

Page LINE

36. 20 *la veille* (Lat. *vigilia*), 'the day before,' 'eve.' Distinguish between this and *la vieille* (Lat. *vetula*), 'the old woman', *la velle* (Lat. *vitula*), 'the hurdy-gurdy.'
- „ 30. *aile*: pronounced *êle*.
- 37 9. *le corps de d'Erlon* what d'Erlon actually did on this day has never been satisfactorily decided, though it is clear that his failure to help Napoleon saved Blücher from a worse defeat.
- „ 18. *tellement démoralisée*. there can be no doubt that Napoleon greatly overrated his success at Ligny.
- „ 25. *les fautes de 1814*: Napoleon is represented as having regretted that he had ever made Ney a marshal, on the ground that he was too stupid for a higher command than that of general of division.
- „ 27. *en*: to be omitted in English or to be translated by 'to do.'
- 38 5. *sui vi des*: see note, p. 19 l 28.
- „ 11. *elle* of course refers to *sa réserve*.
- „ 20. *était* is in singular, in spite of the fact that the collective noun *renfort* is followed by a noun in genitive, because the idea expressed by the verb clearly refers to the reinforcement.
- „ 29. *qu'elle n'aurait pu l'être*. *ne* is not to be translated. It is used in the second clause of a comparative sentence, when the first clause is affirmative. When the first clause is negative *ne* is not to be inserted in the second. In *l'être* *le* is the pronoun representing the adjective *désire*, and is not to be translated either.
- en*: this idiomatic use of *en* with the comparative is equivalent to *à cause de cela*.
39. 1. *démasquer*, 'to unmask,' i.e. 'reveal the presence of.'
- „ 4. Grouchy, who had previously distinguished himself at the battles of Hohenlinden and Wagram and in the Russian campaign, has been made the 'scape-goat' of Napoleon's defeat at Waterloo. His failure to find the Prussians under Blücher and prevent them joining Wellington no doubt did make Napoleon's task harder. But the task was an almost impossible one, and Napoleon himself showed none of his old energy and rapidity of movement.
- „ 6. Distinguish *le tour*, 'the turn,' and *la tour*; see note, p. 2 l 6.

Page LINE

- 39 9 si . . . que with subjunctive = *quelque . . . que*, 'how-ever.'
- „ 16. The story of Wellington's surprise at Brussels has been often told, but nowhere better than in Thackeray's *Vanity Fair*.
- 40 7. arrive le premier : notice the article, and cf. *il partit le dernier*
- „ 15. au centre : cf. *au milieu*, 'in the middle'; *au soleil*, 'in the sun'; *à l'ombre*, 'in the shade.'
41. 2 doané, 'engaged.'
- „ 8. une trentaine, 'about thirty.' The suffix *-aine* indicates approximate numbers; e.g. *une huitaine*, *une douzaine*. The masculine form denotes stanzas of a corresponding number of lines, e.g. *quatrain*, *huitain*, *douzain*.
- „ 19. l'artillerie volante, 'light artillery.'
- „ 25. la vase, 'the mud.' What does *le vase* mean? See note, p. 9 l. 6.
42. 11. Planchenoit : a small village a little to the right of the road from Charleroi to Brussels
- „ 14 soit : notice the subjunctive after a verb expressing a command. Why is *puisse* subjunctive? See note, p. 19 l. 14.
- „ 17. Wavre : there seems to be no doubt that Napoleon had himself sent Grouchy towards the east in the direction of Namur and Liège, whilst Blucher was withdrawing towards Wavre.
- „ 27. lui : i.e. Grouchy.
43. 7. Gembloux is a good deal to the SE. of Wavre, where Blucher actually was.
- „ 19. à cheval, 'astride'; i.e. 'on both sides of.'
- „ 20. la grand'route : *grand* (Lat. *grandis*) had originally, as in Latin, only one form for masculine and feminine. Later, when the feminine of all French adjectives was formed by adding *e*, an apostrophe was added by the grammarians of the seventeenth century, to serve as an apology for the omission of an *e* (which never really existed) in such crystallised expressions as *grand'mère*, *grand'farm*, *grand'soif*, and *grand'route*.
- „ 21. Wellington took up his position with a view to a defensive battle, so that Blucher might have time to come up as he had promised.

Page LINE

43. 22 quatre-vingt mille why is there no sign of plural here' See notes, p. 22 l. 30, p. 30 l. 28.
- „ 24. la crête: the height, or rather ridge, is just south of the village of St. Jean, which itself is nearly two miles south of Waterloo.
- 44 4. Zama, in Africa, where Scipio Africanus conquered Hannibal (202 B.C.) and finished the Second Punic War.
- „ 6. This short description of the battle of Waterloo is taken from Meynier's *Life of Napoleon*. Dumas' account of the battle is misleading in certain particulars. The correction of these would involve more discussion than seems desirable in a book for any but advanced historical students.
- „ 9 Eylau: a town in Prussia, where the French fought a battle in 1807 (see p. xlvii.).
- la Moscowa: the river on which Moscow stands. It was at Borodino, a village on this river, that a battle was fought (see p. liv.).
- „ 26. était à nous: notice this graphic use of the imperfect instead of the past conditional
- „ 30. sa vieille garde: see second note, p. 18 l. 12
45. 13 d'ailleurs, 'besides'; ailleurs, 'elsewhere.'
- „ 22. eurent été rompus: account for the use of the past anterior, already explained in the notes.
- „ 28. acharnée, 'relentless,' 'bitter' *Acharner* was originally a term of falconry, 'to put flesh' (*char*) on the lure to excite the bird, and so figuratively 'to arouse,' 'excite' For the greater part of these ten hours the troops under Wellington's command were fighting without the help of Blücher's army, and only slightly outnumbered the French.
46. 6. Jérôme: see note, p. 33 l. 17
- „ 12. What mood is meure, and why?
- „ 15. balles, 'bullets' of a rifle.
- un boulet, 'a cannon-ball.'
- „ 16. ne veulent de; see note, p. 33 l. 2.
- It was at Jemmapes, or Genappe, that Dumouriez defeated the Austrians in 1792 (see p. xxix.).
- „ 27. en permanence, 'in continuous session.'

Page LINE

- 47 2. **son fils** Napoleon had only one son, to whom, while a baby, he gave the title of King of Rome. His actual words of resignation were . 'Ma vie politique est finie. Je proclame mon fils Napoléon II. empereur des Français.' This son, generally known as the Duke of Reichstadt, died in 1832. He has been made the hero of a play by Edmond Rostand, called *L'Anglon*, recently acted in Paris by Sarah Bernhardt
- „ 4. **refusé** : as a matter of fact, Napoleon only abandoned the idea of flying to America when flight was impossible, and he had to choose between trusting to the English or joining the army on the Loire to renew a hopeless struggle with the allies
- „ 9. England had no right to disregard the wishes of her allies and accede to the wish expressed in this theatrical letter.
- „ 12. **comme Thémistocle** : Themistocles, who had done more than any other man to save Greece during the Persian wars, took refuge with the Persians when, by his arrogance and dishonesty, he had disgusted his fellow-countrymen and was in danger of proscription. He died as pensioner of Artaxerxes, whose father he had defeated at Salamis. Perhaps Napoleon had forgotten some of the incidents in the great Athenian's career.
48. 7. **librement** : see note, p. 47 l 4.
- „ 9 **à l'instigation** : Captain Maitland, who commanded the *Bellerophon*, explained to Napoleon that his surrender must be unconditional.
- „ 23. **loyauté** : not 'loyalty.'
- „ 26. **j'en appelle à l'histoire** : history has, on the whole, rejected Napoleon's appeal.
49. 1. **de** : notice that the preposition *de*, like *à* and *en*, must be repeated before each complement.
- „ 10. **l'amiral** : the definite article must be used in French before proper names preceded by a word denoting title or profession.
50. 2. **de l'île** : after a superlative *de* must be used instead of *dans* before a noun denoting place.
- „ 3. **dépendant de**, 'attached to.' The word *dépendance* is applied to the part of a hotel detached from the main building, and used as an overflow house.

Page LINE

50. 10. M de Las-Cases, a retired naval officer of noble birth, was one of the small suite allowed to accompany Napoleon in his exile.
51. 1. *continuait de dicter*: the result of this dictation was his *Mémoires*, which give a complete account of the period between Toulon and Marengo, and some information about the campaign of 1815. They have served as a mine in which all future historians have dug without being always able to distinguish the pure ore from the dross; for Napoleon never hesitated to make a mis-statement or introduce a false document when it suited his purpose to do so.
- „ 12. Racine (1639-99): the most classical of French tragedians, the author of *Andromaque*, *Les Plaideurs* (a comedy), *Britannicus*, *Iphigénie*, *Phèdre*, *Esther*, and *Athalie*. The last two were sacred dramas, written at the instigation of Madame de Maintenon.
- „ 13. Molière (1622-73): the great writer of comedies. His real name was Poquelin, but he adopted that of Molière when he joined a company of provincial actors. His chief works are *L'Avare*, *Le Misanthrope*, *Le Bourgeois Gentilhomme*, *Le Malade Imaginaire*, *Tartuffe*, and *Les Femmes Savantes*.
- Corneille (1606-84): the author of *Le Cid*, *Cinna*, *Les Horaces*, *Polyeucte*, *Nicomède*, etc.
- „ 22. Gourgaud is considered the most veracious of the chroniclers of the exile, mainly because of the unattractive picture that he draws of himself. His jealousy ended on his departure from St. Helena.
- „ 23. Montholon had been taught by Napoleon when a captain of artillery, shared the magnificence of his Empire as well as the dreariness of St. Helena, and lived to witness the re-establishment of the Empire under Napoleon III in 1851.
- „ 30. *chez soi*: explain the use of *soi*.
52. 15. *mauvaise petite maison*: notice the omission of the indefinite article in apposition.
- „ 17. *l'appartement* must not be translated 'apartment'; 'apartments' or 'suite' will do here.
- „ 18. *de long* is an equivalent for *de longueur*. Cf. *de large* for *de largeur*, *de haut* for *de hauteur*; but *d'épaisseur* and *de profondeur* cannot be replaced by *d'épais* and *de profond*.

Page LINE

52. 29. *abat-jour* does not change in the plural, *abat* being a verb and *jour* here meaning 'light.'
53. 7. *du roi de Rome*: son of Napoleon and Marie-Louise, born 1811, proclaimed Emperor of the French under title of Napoleon II. on his father's abdication in 1815; see note, p. 47 l. 2.
- „ 17. *Marie-Louise*, daughter of the Emperor of Austria, was married to Napoleon in 1810. After his fall she deserted him, and ended her days as the morganatic wife of an Austrian general.
- „ 21. *Frederick the Great* died at Sans Souci, his palace at Potsdam, near Berlin, in 1786. See p. xlvii
- „ 23. *Marengo*: a village near Alessandria, in Piedmont, where Napoleon conquered the Austrians in 1800. See p. xli.
- „ 24. *Austerlitz* a town in Moravia, where Napoleon won a decisive victory over the Austrians and Russians on December 2, 1805. See p. xlv.
54. 9. *les Tuileries*. See note, p. 25 l. 24.
le Kremlin: the palace, or fort, of the Czars at Moscow.
l'Escorial: the palace of the kings of Spain in the small town of that name near Madrid. It was built by Philip II in memory of the battle of St. Quentin, and is at once a palace, a church, and a monastery
- „ 20. *lever la consigne*, 'to revoke orders.'
- „ 23. *une sentinelle* is derived from the Italian *sentinella*, and hence its gender.
55. 2. *soit*. why the subjunctive?
- „ 13. *des plus insalubres*: as a matter of fact the air of St. Helena is very healthy, and it has been proposed to turn it into a sanatorium for West Africa.
- „ 16. *sur ces entrefaites*, 'in the interval,' 'meanwhile.' The substantive (*entre* = 'between,' *faites* = *choses faites*) has no singular, and is only used in this adverbial phrase.
- „ 24. *Sir Hudson Lowe* did not show tact in his difficult task of guarding Napoleon. But the more serious charges made against him by O'Meara and Napoleon break down under investigation. In any case the English Government was more responsible than their representative. See the article on him in the *Dictionary of National Biography*.

Page LINE

56. 11. Antomarchi was sent in 1819 owing to the intercession of the Pope. After the departure of O'Meara Napoleon refused to see an English doctor; but he soon quarrelled with his fellow-countryman Antomarchi.
- „ 22 *une comète* · cf. Shakespeare, *Julius Caesar*, II. ii. 30—
When beggars die, there are no comets seen.
- „ 27. Distinguish *le fois* (Pop. Lat. *fiducium*), 'liver', *la fois* (Lat. *fidem*), 'faith'; *la fois* (Lat. *vicem*), 'time.'
57. 13. *plus de* in incomplete sentences has a negative sense, so have *jamais*, *personne*, *rien*, *du tout*.
je sais ce qu'il en est (also *ce qui en est*), 'I know what there is in it' = 'I know the truth of the matter.'
- „ 21 *quand je serai*, 'when I am.' The French are more accurate and use the future where we more carelessly use the present, if the verb of the principal sentence be in the future or refer to future time.
- „ 26. Kléber, etc. : these are the names of Napoleon's famous generals. This whole speech is probably an invention of Antomarchi, who is the only authority for it. For Kléber see second note, p. 30 l. 9.
- Desaix was killed at the battle of Marengo, after contributing greatly to the victory. See p. xli.
- „ 27 Bessières served in the constitutional guards of Louis XVI., did good service in all Napoleon's campaigns, especially at Austerlitz, was killed in a reconnaissance the day before the battle of Lutzen.
- Duroc, aide-de-camp to Napoleon, was killed in battle 1813, and deeply mourned by Napoleon.
- Ney : see note, p. 25 l. 5.
- Murat · see note, p. 6 l. 13.
- Masséna, the son of an Italian shopkeeper, defended Genoa in 1800, saved the French army at Essling, was opposed to Wellington in Portugal, by whom he was forced to retreat. After 1815 he lived in retirement until his death in 1817.
- Berthier, prince of Wagram, chief of Napoleon's staff, after submitting to the Bourbon government in 1814, committed suicide or was murdered on the invasion of France by the allies in 1815.
58. 3. *les Scipion*, etc. : proper names do not, as a rule, take the sign of the plural in French except when used as common nouns to designate (1) people like the person

Page LINE

- named—*les Virgiles sont rares*, 'men like Virgil are rare'; (2) the works of the person named—*des Raphaels*, 'pictures by Raphael.'
58. 14. **ne saurait être**: notice that *pas* is always omitted with the conditional of *savoir* used in the sense of *pouvoir*.
- „ 27. **Vienne**: Napoleon's son was residing at the court of his grandfather, Francis I of Austria
- „ 28. **Madame Mère**, as she was called, lived in retirement at Rome until the age of eighty-six.
59. 2. **Charlemagne**: Charles the Great, born in 742 A.D., crowned Emperor of the West in 800, died in 814.
- Pompée**: Cneius Pompeius, after conquering Mithradates, Spartacus, and the Pirates, formed with Caesar and Crassus the first triumvirate. Subsequently his quarrel with Caesar led to the civil war, in which he was defeated at Pharsalus (48 B.C.). He fled to Egypt, where he was murdered by the order of Ptolemy Dionysius.
- „ 4. **de tout**: verbs denoting *fulness* and the reverse (e.g. *remplir, manquer, combler, charger*), probably because they suggest the idea of drawing from a source, take a genitive
- „ 9. **eût**: notice the subjunctive after a relative pronoun or adverb depending on a superlative or *le seul, le dernier, le premier, l'unique*
- „ 29. **que je n'aie consacré**: notice the omission of *pas*, the principal sentence being also negative.
- 60 2. **débander l'arc**, 'to unbend the bow', cf. Horace—
neque semper arcum
tendit Apollo.
- „ 3. **des institutions libérales**: see note, p. 29 l. 24, but in the light of Napoleon's action in 1807 and his inaction afterwards not much attention need be paid to these promises.
- „ 21. **le pouls**: do not sound the last two letters.
- „ 29. **le docteur**: this post-mortem examination showed that the main cause of death was cancer of the stomach.
- 61 13. **fût**: why subjunctive?
- „ 23. The legion of honour is a civil and military order established by Napoleon in 1802. See p. xlii.

Page LINE

61. 25. *la Couronne de fer*. Napoleon was crowned King of Italy at Milan on March 25, 1805, with the iron crown of the Lombard chiefs who first settled in Italy
- „ 30. *chapelle ardente*: we have no English equivalent for this phrase, which alludes to the lighting of candles round the coffin in a mortuary chapel.
62. 2. *un crucifix*. don't sound the *x*
- „ 12. *du mort*: distinguish between *la mort*, 'death,' and *le mort*, 'dead man'
- „ 15. *une assiette à ses armes*, 'a plate with his arms upon it.' For this use of *à* to denote the characteristic feature cf. *l'homme au long nez*, 'the man with the long nose'
- „ 27. *Marengo*. see note, p. 53 l. 23.
63. 5. *l'Orient qu'il avait conquis* this is an exaggeration. Though for a time Napoleon conquered Egypt, his designs on the East were foiled by Sir Sidney Smith at Acre. See p xxxviii.
- „ 17. In the reign of Louis Philippe, Napoleon's remains were, with the consent of the English Government, taken to Paris. It was in full state that the ex-Emperor entered his capital for the last time. He now rests in the Invalides under a conspicuous dome, and around him the pensioners of the French army live out the last years of their lives.

ALPHABETICAL LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS OCCURRING IN THE TEXT

NOTE. I.—Tenses not given in this list may be formed in accordance with the following rules:—

- 1 The Imperfect Ind. may be formed from the Present Participle by changing *ant* into *aïs*, e.g. *allant, j'allais*.
- 2 The Imperfect Subj. may be formed from the 2nd Person Sing. of the Present Participle by adding *se*, e.g. *tu allas, j'allasse*.
- 3 The Present Subj. may be formed from the 3rd Person Plural of the Present Ind. by cutting off *nt*, e.g. *ils acquièrent, j'acquies*.
- 4 The Imperative is equivalent to the 2nd Person Sing. and the 1st and 2nd Person Plural of the Present Indicative with-
out the personal pronoun, but the *s* of the 2nd Person Sing. of the Pres. Indic. is dropped in the 1st conjugation.

II.—Verbs marked with an asterisk are conjugated with *être*

INFINITIVE	PARTICIPLES	PRESENT INDICATIVE	PRETERITE or P. DI FINIT.	FUTURE	N B
acquies, to acquire	acquiesant, acquis	j'acquies, nous acquiesons, ils acquiesent	j'acquis	j'acquiesrai	<i>Also</i> conquies
*aller, to go	allant, allé	je vais, tu vas, il va, nous allons, vous allez, ils vont	j'allai	j'irai	<i>Pres. Subj.</i> j'aie, tu aies, il aille, nous allions, vous alliez, ils aillent. <i>Imperative</i> va
assailir, to assail	assailant, assaili	j'assaille, nous assailions, ils assaillent	j'assailis	j'assailirai	<i>Also</i> saillir, ¹ triessailir, cueillir, accueillir, recevoir
*s'asseoir, to sit down	s'asseyant, assis, s'étant assis	je m'assieds, tu t'assieds, il s'assied, nous nous asseyons, ils s'asseyent	je m'assis	je m'assie- rai	il s'est assis, <i>he sat down</i> il est assis, <i>he is seated</i>
avoir, to have	ayant, eu	j'ai, tu as, il a, nous avons, vous avez, ils ont	j'eus	j'aurai	<i>Pres. Subj.</i> j'aie, tu aies, il ait, nous ayons, vous ayez, ils aient

¹ saillir, to project, is only used in the third person. cueillir and its compounds have in the Future and Conditional -era(s),
as also saillir, but not its compounds.

INFINITIVE	PARTICIPLES	PRESENT INDICATIVE	PARTICIPLES OF T. DEFINITE	FUTURE	N.B.
battre, <i>to beat</i>	battant, battu	je bats, tu bats, il bat, nous battons, ils battent	je battis	je battrai	<i>So "se battre, to fight, and com- pounds of battre, as combattre, to fight, etc.</i>
boire, <i>to drink</i>	buvant, bu	je bois, nous buvons, ils boivent	je bus	je boirai	<i>So its compounds</i>
bouillir, <i>to boil</i>	bouillant, bouilli	je bous, tu bous, il bout, nous bouillons, ils bouillent	je bouillis (<i>none</i>)	je bouillirai	
clore, <i>to close</i>	(<i>no pres. part.</i>) clos	je clos, tu clos, il clôt (<i>no plural</i>)		je clorai	<i>Pres. Subj. je close, tu closes, il close, nous closions, vous closiez, ils closent</i>
conclure, <i>to conclude</i>	concluant, conclu	je conclus, il conclut, nous concluons	je conclus	je conclurai	<i>Also exclure</i>
conduire, <i>to lead</i>	conduisant, conduit	je conduis, nous condui- sons, ils conduisent	je conduisis	je conduirai	<i>Also most verbs in -ire Nure and here have Past Part. num, lui</i>
connaître, <i>to know</i>	connaissant, connu	je connais, il connaît, nous connaissons, ils connaissent	je connus	je connaîtrai	<i>Always before t. So Verb. in autre, as incommatire, recon- naître, except naïtre</i>
condre, <i>to sew</i>	cousant, cousu	je couds, tu couds, il coud, nous cousons, ils cousent	je cousis	je coudrai	

1 *pature, to graze, has no Pres. and no Imperf. Subj. Its Past Part., pu, is only used as a term in falconry*

INFINITIVE	PARTICIPLES	PRESENT INDICATIVE	PREFÉRITE or P. DÉFINIE	FUTURI	N. B.
courir, <i>to run</i>	courant, couru	je cours, nous courons, ils courent	je cours	je courrai	Also accourir, concourir, parcourir, secourir
couvrir, <i>to cover</i>	couvrant, couvert	je couvre, nous couvrons, ils couvrent	je couvris	je couvrirai	So offrir, ouvrir, souffrir, and their compounds, <i>es découvrir, etc.</i>
craindre, <i>to fear</i>	craignant, craint	je crains, tu crains, il craint, nous craignons, ils craignent	je craignis	je crandrai	Similarly all verbs in - aindre , - eindre , - oindre
croire, <i>to believe</i>	croyant, cro	je crois, il croit, nous croyons, ils croient	je crus	je croirai	
croître, <i>to grow</i>	croissant, crû, crue (<i>m. pl. crus</i>)	je crois, tu crois, il croît, nous croissons, vous croissez, ils croissent	je crus	je croîtrai	accroître and décroître take no examples in the 1st and 2nd Sing. Pres Ind., in the Preférite and Past Part
cueillir, <i>to gather</i>	cueillant, cueilli	je cueille, tu cueilles, il cueille, nous cueillons, ils cueillent	je cueillis	je cueillerai	Also . accueillir and recueillir, salir, assaillir and bressaillir <i>The last two have in the Future and Conditional -rai(s)</i>
*déchirer, <i>to decay</i>	déchérant, déchu	je déchais, il déchait, nous déchoyons, ils déchoint	je déchus	je décherrai	Échour in Pres. Ind. has il échout Choir is only used in Infinitive.
devoir, <i>to owe</i>	devant, dû, due	je dois, nous devons, ils doivent	je dus	je devrai	

INFINITIVE	PARTICIPLES	PRESENT INDICATIVE	PRETERITE or P. DEFINITE	FUTURE	N.B.
dire, to say	disant, dit	je dis, nous disons, vous dites, ils disent	je dis	je dirai	<i>Compounds of dire, except redire, have dises in the 2nd Pl. Pres. Ind. and Imperative¹.</i>
dormir, to sleep	dormant, dormi	je dors, tu dors, il dort, nous dormons, ils dorment	je dormis	je dormirai	<i>Also *s'endormir, *se redormir. Similarly mentir, *parir pour, *se repentir de, *sentir, servir, *sortir, and their compounds. But réparer, to divide, and ressortir à, to belong to the pronunciation of, go like finir.</i>
écrire, to write	écrivant, écrit	j'écris, nous écrivons, ils écrivent	j'écrivis	j'écrirai	<i>Also décrire, inscrire.</i>
envoyer, to send	envoyant, envoyé	j'envoie, nous envoyons, ils envoient	j'envoyai	j'envverrai	<i>Also renvoyer. Verbs in -oyer and -uyer change the y into i before a mute syllable. Those in -ayer can do so, but can also retain y throughout.</i>
être, to be	étant, été	je suis, tu es, il est, nous sommes, vous êtes, ils sont	je fus	je serai	<i>Pres. Subj. je sois, tu sois, il soit, nous soyons, vous soyez, ils soient.</i>
extraire, to extract	extrayant, extraît	j'extrais, nous extrayons, ils extraient	(none)	j'extraurai	<i>Pres. Subj. j'extrait, nous extrayions, vous extrayiez, ils extraient. No Imperfect Subj.</i>

¹ *maudire* has *ss* in the Pres. Part. *maudissant* and the forms derived from it.

INFINITIVE	PARTICIPLES	PRESENT INDICATIVE	PRESENT or FUTURE	FUTURE	N.B.
faillir, to be near, to fail	(faillant,) failli	(je faux nous faillons, ils faillent)	je faillis	(je faudrai)	Note il a failli mourir, he very nearly died. The only forms used are the Infinitive, the Past Definite, and the compound tenses
faire, to make, to do	faisant, ¹ fait	je fais, nous faisons, vous faites, ils font	je fis	je ferai	Pres. Subj. je fasse, nous fas- sions, ils fassent
falloir, to be necessary	(none,) fallu	il faut	il fallut	il faudra	Pres. Subj. il faille Imperfect Indic. il fallait
fuir to flee	fuyant, fui	je fuis, nous fuyons, ils fuient	je fus	je furai	Pres. Subj. je tienne, nous tenions Also *s'enfuir, to run away
gésir, to lie	gisant	il gît, nous gisons, vous gisez, ils gisent			Imperfect Indic. je gisais (Only used in these tenses.)
haïr, to hate	haïssant, haï	je hais, tu hais, il hait, nous haïssons, vous haïssez, ils haïssent	je haïs	je haïrai	This verb is irregular only in the position of the <i>trema</i> (-)
lire, to read	lisant, lu	je lis, nous lisons	je lus	je lirai	So its compounds, élire, to elect, relire, to read again, etc.
luire, to shine	luisant, lui	je luis, nous luïsons	(none)	je luirai	Remember that <i>lure</i> and <i>nuire</i> differ from other verbs in -uire in the Past Part. only

¹ Pronounce *faisant* and its derivatives *faisons*, etc., as if spelt *fesant*, *fesons*, etc.

INFINITIVE	PARTICIPLES	PRESENT INDICATIVE	PRETERITE or P. DEFINITE	FUTURE	N. B.
mettre, <i>to put</i>	mettant, mis	je mets, nous mettons, ils mettent	je mis	je mettrai	Also : commettre, permettre, promettre, omettre, remettre, compromettre
moudre, <i>to grind</i>	moulant, moulu	je mouds, tu mouds, il moud, nous moulons, ils moulent	je moulus	je moudrai	<i>So its compounds</i>
*mourir, <i>to die</i>	mourant, mort	je meurs, nous mourons, ils meurent	je mourus	je mourrai	<i>Pres. Subj. je meure, nous mourons, ils meurent</i>
mouvoir, <i>to move</i>	mouvant mû, mûe	je meus, nous mouvons, ils meuvent	je mus	je mouvrai	<i>Note : émouvoir, Past Part ému, without circumflex</i>
*naître, <i>to be born</i>	naissant, né	je nais, il naît, nous naissons, ils naissent	je naquis	je naîtrai	<i>renaître has no Past Part. He was born il naquit</i>
paraître, <i>to appear</i>	paraissant, paru	je paraissais, il paraît, nous paraissions, ils paraissent	je parus	je paraîtrai	<i>Note that verbs in -aire have always a circumflex before a t</i>
plaire, <i>to please</i>	plaisant, plu	je plais, il plaît, nous plaissons, ils plaisent	je plus	je planai	<i>So also all verbs in -aire except faire and taire</i>
pouvoir, <i>to provide for</i>	pour- voyant, pourvu	je pouvais, nous pouvions, ils pouvoient	je pourvus	je pourvoirai	<i>If you please s'il vous plaît</i>
pouvoir, <i>to be able</i>	pouvant, ph	je peux, il peut, nous pouvons, ils peuvent	je pus	je pourrai	<i>Pres. Subj. je puisse, nous puissions. Note that pus may be omitted after pouvoir</i>

INFINITIVE	PARTICIPLES	PRESENT INDICATIVE	PREFÉRITE or P ^R ÉFÉRITE	FUTUR	N B
prendre, <i>to take</i>	prenant, pris	je prends, nous prenons, ils prennent	je pris	je prendrai	<i>Pres. Subj.</i> je prenne , nous prenons <i>Also</i> surprendre, comprendre, entreprendre, reprendre <i>resous is used to express a change of condition du brouillard résous en pluie, mist turned into rain</i>
résoudre, <i>to resolve</i>	résolvant, résolu and résous	je résous, nous résolvons, ils résolvent	je résolus	je résoudrai	
rire, <i>to laugh</i>	riant, ri	je ris, nous rions, ils rient	je ris, nous rîmes, ils rirent	je rirai	<i>Pres. Subj.</i> je rie, nous rions, ils rient <i>Similarly</i> sourne
rompre, <i>to break</i>	rompant, rompu	je romps, il rompt, nous rompons	je rompis	je romprai	
savoir, <i>to know</i>	sachant, su	je sais, nous savons, ils savent	je sus	je saurai	<i>Imper. Ind.</i> je sache, <i>Imperative.</i> sache, sachez <i>Pres. Subj.</i> je sache
souffrir, <i>to suffer</i>	souffrant, souffert	je souffre, nous souffrons	je souffris	je souffrirai	
suffire, <i>to suffice</i>	suffisant, suffi	je suffis, nous suffisons, ils suffisent	je suffis, nous suffîmes, ils suffirent	je suffirai	<i>So</i> contine, <i>creep in the Past Part., which is confit</i>

INFINITIVE	PARTICIPLES	PRESENT INDICATIVE	PRESERVE OF P. DEFINITE	FUTURE	N D.
suivre, <i>to follow</i>	suivant, suivi	je suis, tu es, il suit, nous suivons, ils suivent	je suis	je suivrai	<i>Also</i> poursuivie ; <i>(used only in 3rd Pers. Sing- and Pl. of each tense)</i>
taire, <i>to keep silent</i>	taisant, tu	je tais, nous taisons, ils taisent	je tus	je tairai	<i>Also</i> *se taire, <i>to keep silent</i>
tenir, <i>to hold</i>	tenant, tenu	je tiens, nous tenons, ils tiennent	je tiens, nous tiâmes, vous tin- tes, ils tin- rent	je tiendrai	<i>Also</i> appartenir, conteneur, dé- tenir, entretenir, maintenir, obtenir, retenir, soutenir
trahir, <i>to malt</i>	trahant, trahi	je trais, nous trayons, ils traient	(wanting)	je trahirai	<i>Similarly</i> soustraire
vaincre, <i>to conquer</i>	vainquant, vaincu	je vains, ¹ tu vances, ¹ il vanc, ¹ nous vainquons, ils vainquent	je vainquis	je vaincrai	<i>Also</i> convaincre
vaincre, <i>to be worth</i>	vainant, valu	je vauz, il vaut, nous valons, ils valent	je valus	je vaudrai	<i>Pres. 3rd Pers. je vaille,² nous villons, ils valillent</i>

1. Pronounce vain.

2. prévaloir has in the Pres. Subj. je prévale.

INFINITIVE	PARTICIPLES	PRESENT INDICATIVE	PARTICIPLES OF PRESENCE	FUTURE	N B
*venir, <i>to come</i>	venant, venu	je viens, nous venons, ils viennent	je vins, nous vîmes, ils vinrent	je viendrai	<i>Also</i> devenir, redevenir, and revenir
vêtir, <i>to clothe</i>	vêtant, vêtu	je vêts, il vêt, nous vêtons, ils vêtent	je vêtis, nous vîmes, ils vîrent	je vêtirai	<i>Also</i> . revêtir de
vivre, <i>to live</i>	vivant, vécu	je vis, il vit, nous vivons, ils vivent	je vis, nous vîmes, ils vîrent	je vivrai	<i>Also</i> • revivre
voir, <i>to see</i>	voyant, vu	je vois, nous voyons, ils voient	je vis, nous vîmes, ils vîrent	je verrai	<i>Also</i> revoir, entrevoir. <i>Pré-vou</i> has in the <i>Future</i> je pré-vouai, pour voir has in the <i>Future</i> je pourvoirai and in the <i>Preterite</i> je pourvus
vouloir, <i>to wish</i>	voulant, voulu	je veux, il veut, nous voulons, ils veulent	je vis, nous vîmes, ils vîrent	je voudrai	<i>Pres. Subj.</i> je veuille, nous voulions, ils veulent. <i>Im-perfecture</i> veux, voulons, voulez, or veuille (veuillons), veuillez. <i>The latter form frequently has the meaning of</i> 'have the kindness to,'

VOCABULARY

Note—This Vocabulary gives the primary and ordinary meanings of words, and therefore does not in every case supply the best word to be used in translation

à, 'at,' 'to,' 'with'

— *l'aide de*, 'by the help of'

— *l'improviste*, 'unawares'

— *moins que* (c. ne, and subj.), 'un-
less'

— *peine*, 'scarcely'

— *peu près*, 'nearly'

— *temps*, 'in time'

— *travers*, 'through,' 'across'

abandonner, 'to desert,' 'leave'

abat-jour (l'), m., 'shade'

abdiquer, 'to abdicate'

abdominal, 'abdominal,' 'of the
stomach'

abord (l'), m., 'access,' 'approach'
d'—, 'at first'

abordage (l'), m., 'boarding'

abri (l'), m., 'shelter,' 'protection'
à l'— de, 'safe from'

absence (l'), f., 'absence'

acajou (l'), m., 'mahogany'

accélérer, 'to hasten'

accent (l'), m., 'accent'

accepter, 'to accept'

acclamation (l') f., 'acclamation'

accompagner, 'to accompany'

accouru, see *accourir*

accourir (irr. v., see *courir*), 'to
run up'

accueillir (irr. v., see *cueillir*),
'to welcome'

acharné, 'bitter,' 'relentless'

acheminer, 'to dispatch'

s'—, 'to march,' 'make your way to'

acheter, 'to buy'

achever, 'to complete,' 'finish'

acquérir (irr. v.), 'to acquire'

acquis, see *acquiescer*

acte (l'), m., 'act,' 'action'

actif, 'active'

action (l'), f., 'action'

activement, 'actively'

adieu, 'farewell'

faire ses — *a a*, 'to take leave of'

admettre (irr. v., see *mettre*), 'to
admit'

administrer, 'to administer'

admirable, 'admirable'

admis, see *admettre*

adopter, 'to adopt'

adoucir, 'to soften,' 'mitigate'

adresser, 'to address'

adroit, 'skilful'

affable, 'affable'

affaire (l'), f., 'affair,' 'business,'
'matter'

avoir — à, 'to have to do with'

affectionner, 'to care for,' 'have
a delight in'

afficher, 'to post up'

affolé, 'mad'

afin de, 'in order to'

agent (l'), m., 'agent'

agiter, 'to agitate'	anéantir, 'to annihilate'
agonie (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'agony'	anglais, 'English'
agréable, 'agreeable'	à l'—e, 'in the English way'
agriculture (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'agriculture'	Angleterre (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'England'
aide (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'help,' 'aid'	animadversion (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'animadversion,' 'reproof'
à l'—de, 'by the help of'	animer, 'to arouse,' 'excite'
aide-de-camp (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'aide-de-camp'	anniversaire (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'anniversary'
aigle (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'eagle'	annoncer, 'to announce'
aigle (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'eagle' in heraldic sense	antédiluvien, 'antediluvian'
aigu (aigue), 'sharp'	août, <i>m.</i> , 'August'
aile (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'wing'	apercevoir, 'to perceive'
ailleurs, 'elsewhere'	apparaître (irr. v., see <i>paraître</i>), 'to appear'
à l'—, 'besides'	appareiller, 'to match,' 'pair,' 'set sail'
aimer, 'to love'	apparence (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'appearance'
ainsi, 'thus'	appartement (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'apartments,' 'set of rooms'
— que, 'just as'	appartenir (irr. v., see <i>tenir</i>), 'to belong'
air (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'appearance,' 'air'	appeler, 'to call'
avoir l'—, 'to look'	en — à, 'to appeal to'
ajourner, 'to put off,' 'postpone'	faire —, 'to summon'
ajouter, 'to add'	appliquer, 'to apply'
alarme (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'alarm'	apporter, 'to bring'
allée (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'avenue,' 'walk'	appréciation (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'estimate,' 'valuation'
allégresse (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'liveliness'	apprenait, see <i>apprendre</i>
aller (irr. v.), 'to go'	apprendre (irr. v., see <i>prendre</i>), 'to learn'
s'en —, 'to go away'	apprêt (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'preparation'
allié (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'ally'	apprit, see <i>apprendre</i>
allié, 'allied'	approcher, 'to approach'
allumer, 'to light'	appui (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'support'
alors, 'then'	appuyer, 'to support,' 'prop'
altesse (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'highness'	s'— sur, 'to lean on,' 'rely on'
âme (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'soul,' 'mind,' 'life'	après, (prep.) 'after'
améliorer, 'to improve'	(adv.) 'afterwards'
s'—, 'to get better'	après-midi (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'afternoon'
amener, 'to bring'	arborer, 'to set up,' 'hoist'
amertume (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'bitterness'	arc (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'bow'
ameublement (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'furniture'	l'— en ciel, <i>m.</i> , 'rainbow'
ami (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'friend'	ardent, 'burning,' 'fiery'
amiral (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'admiral'	ardeur (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'keenness,' 'heat'
amour (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'love'	
amour-propre (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'pride'	
amphithéâtre (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'amphitheatre'	
ancien, 'former,' 'old'	
ancre (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'anchor'	

argent (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'money,' 'silver'	au-devant de, 'to meet'
argenterie (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'plate,' 'silver-plate'	audience (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'audience,' 'interview'
arguer, 'to argue,' 'infer'	augmenter, 'to increase'
arme (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'arm,' 'weapon'	aujourd'hui, 'to-day'
armée (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'army'	au lieu de, 'instead of'
armoire (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'cupboard'	au pas de charge, 'quick march'
armurier (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'gunsmith'	auprès de, 'near,' 'in comparison with'
arracher à, 'to snatch away from'	au reste, 'however'
arrangement (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'arrangement'	aussi (adv.), 'also'
arranger, 'to arrange'	— <i>que</i> , 'as . as'
arrêter, 'to stop,' 'decide'	aussi (conj.), 'therefore,' 'so,' 'and so'
s' —, 'to stop'	aussitôt, 'immediately'
arrière-garde (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'rearguard'	— <i>que</i> , 'as soon as'
arrivée (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'arrival'	autel (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'altar'
arriver, 'to arrive'	autopsie (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'post-mortem examination'
artillerie (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'artillery'	autoriser, 'to authorise'
artilleur (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'artilleryman'	autorité (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'authority'
asile (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'asylum,' 'refuge'	autour de, 'around'
asseoir (s') (irr. v.), 'to sit down'	Autriche (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'Austria'
assez, 'enough,' 'sufficiently'	avait, see <i>avoir</i>
assiette (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'plate'	avance (d'), 'beforehand'
assis, see <i>asseoir</i>	avancer, 'to advance,' 'move forward'
assit, see <i>asseoir</i>	s' —, 'to advance'
assujettir, 'to subject'	avant, 'before' (<i>of time</i>)
assurance (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'assurance'	<i>en</i> —, 'in front,' 'forward'
assurer, 'to assure,' 'convince'	— <i>que</i> , 'before'
s' — <i>de</i> , 'to make certain of'	avant-garde (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'vanguard'
atelier (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'workshop,' 'studio'	avant-poste (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'outpost'
atone, 'dull'	avec, 'with'
attaque (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'attack'	avertir, 'to warn'
attaquer, 'to attack'	avis (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'advice'
atteignant, see <i>atteindre</i>	aviser à, 'to see to,' 'superintend'
atteindre (irr. v., see <i>croindre</i>), 'to attain'	avoir (irr. v.), 'to have'
atteint, see <i>atteindre</i>	— <i>besoin</i> , 'to need'
attendre, 'to wait for,' 'await'	— <i>chaud</i> , 'to be hot'
attendu que, 'seeing that'	— <i>faim</i> , 'to be thirsty'
attention (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'attention'	— <i>froid</i> , 'to be cold'
<i>faire</i> —, 'to pay attention'	— <i>peur</i> , 'to be afraid'
attirer, 'to draw,' 'attract'	— <i>raison</i> , 'to be right'
auberge (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'inn'	— <i>soif</i> , 'to be thirsty'
aucun, 'any,' 'no'	
au delà de, 'beyond'	

avril, *m.*, 'April'
 ayant, see *avoir*

baignoire (la), 'bath'
 — *d'un théâtre*, 'lower box'

baiser, 'to kiss'
 balle (la), 'bullet', 'shot'

banc (le), 'bench'

barricade (la), 'barricade'

barricader, 'to barricade'

bas (le), 'stocking'

bas (basse), 'low'

à —, 'down with'

bastion (le), 'bastion'

bataille (la), 'battle'

en —, 'in line of battle'

bataillon (le), 'battalion'

bâtiment (le), 'boat', 'building'

batterie (la), 'battery', 'fight'

— *de cuisine*, 'kitchen utensils'

battrer, see *battre*

battre (irr. *v.*), 'to beat', 'sound'

— *en retraite*, 'to beat a retreat'

se —, 'to fight'

beaucoup, 'much', 'a great deal'

beau-père (le), 'father-in-law'

Belgique (la), 'Belgium'

bélier (le), 'rain'

berceau (le), 'cradle', 'arbour'

besoin (le), 'need'

avoir — de, 'to need'

bibliothèque (la), 'library'

bien (le), 'good', 'property'

bien, 'well', 'thoroughly'

— *que* (subj.), 'although'

bientôt, 'soon'

bivac (le), 'bivouac'

bivouaquer, 'to bivouac'

blanc (blanche), 'white'

blessé, 'to wound'

bleu, 'blue'

blond, 'fair'

bois (le), 'wood'

bon (bonne), 'good'

bonheur (le), 'happiness'

bonne, see *bon*

de — heure, 'early'

bonnet (le), 'cap'

bord (le), 'border', 'edge', 'board'

à —, 'on board'

border, 'to border'

bornier, 'to confine', 'limit'

botte (la), 'boot'

— *à l'écuyère*, 'riding-boot'

bouche (la), 'mouth'

— *à feu*, 'guns'

boucler, 'to buckle'

boue (la), 'mud'

boulet (le), 'ball', 'shot'

bourgeois, 'plam', 'respectable'

citizen, 'plebeian'

bout (le), 'end', 'termination'

venir à — de, 'to succeed'

branche (la), 'branch'

bras (le), 'arm'

brave, 'brave', 'honest', 'good'

brick (le), 'brig'

bride (la), 'bridle', 'rein'

britannique, 'British'

bruit (le), 'rumour', 'noise'

brûler, 'to burn'

brume (la), 'fog'

brut, 'rough', 'coarse'

buste (le), 'bust'

but (le), 'object', 'aim', 'intention'

butte (la), 'knoll', 'butt'

en — à, 'exposed to'

cabinet (le), 'study', 'small room'

cadavre (le), 'corpse'

cadre (le), 'frame', 'staff'

caisse (la), 'box', 'chest', 'drum'

calcul (le), 'calculation'

calculer, 'to calculate'

calèche (la), 'barouche', 'carriage'

calme, 'calm'

calmer, 'to calm'

- camp (le), 'camp'
 campagne (la), 'campaign,' 'country'
 camper, 'to encamp'
 canapé (le), 'sofa'
 cancer (le), 'cancer'
 canon (le), 'gun,' 'cannon'
 canonnade (la), 'firing'
 canot (le), 'boat'
 cantonner, 'to quarter'
 cap (le), 'cape,' 'head'
de pied en —, 'from head to foot'
 capitaine (le), 'captain'
 capitale (la), 'capital'
 car, 'for,' 'because'
 carré (le), 'square'
 carrière (la), 'career,' 'quarry'
 carte (la), 'map'
 carton (le), 'cardboard,' 'paste-board'
 cas (le), 'case,' 'event'
 casimir (le), 'kerseymere,' a twilled woollen cloth
 cathédrale (la), 'cathedral'
 catholique, 'catholic'
 cause (la), 'cause'
 causer, 'to converse,' 'talk,' 'cause'
 cavalcade (la), 'riding-party,' 'excursion'
 cavalerie (la), 'cavalry'
 cavalier (le), 'horseman'
 ce, cet, cette (*pl. ces*), 'this' or 'that'
c'est, 'it is'
 cela, 'that'
 celle-ci (*fem. of celui-ci*), 'this,' 'the latter'
 celui, celle (*pl. ceux, celles*), *dem. pr.*, 'he,' 'she,' 'the one' ('who' or 'which')
 cent, 'hundred'
 centaine (la), 'hundred'
une —, 'about a hundred'
 centre (le), 'centre'
- cependant, 'meanwhile,' 'however,' 'nevertheless'
 cercle (le), 'circle'
 cercueil (le), 'coffin'
 certain, 'certain,' 'sure'
 cerveau (le), 'brain'
 cesse (la), 'ceasing'
sans —, 'incessantly'
 cesser, 'to cease,' 'stop'
 ceux (*pl. of celui*), *dem. pr.*, 'those'
 chacun (*pron.*), 'each one'
 chaise (la), 'chair'
 chaleur (la), 'heat'
 chambellan (le), 'chamberlain'
 chambre (la), 'room'
 champ (le), 'field'
 chance (la), 'chance'
 chandelier (le), 'candlestick'
 change (le), 'exchange'
donner le — à, 'to put on the wrong scent'
 changement (le), 'change'
 chanter, 'to sing'
 chapeau (le), 'hat'
 chapelain (le), 'chaplain'
 chapelle (la), 'chapel'
 chapitre (le), 'chapter'
 charge (la), 'load'
au pas de —, 'quick march'
 charger, 'to charge,' 'entrust'
se — de, 'to undertake'
 charpentier (le), 'carpenter'
 chasseurs (les), *m.*, 'light infantry'
— d'Afrique, 'light cavalry'
 château (le), 'castle'
 chaumière (la), 'cottage'
 chaussée (la), 'highroad'
 chaussures (les), *f.*, 'boots,' 'shoes'
 chebec (le), *see note*, p. 9 l. 13
 chef (le), 'chief'
 chemin (le), 'path,' 'road'
 cheminée (la), 'chimney,' 'fireplace,' 'hearth'

cher (chère), 'dear'	commencer , 'to begin'
chercher , 'to look for,' 'seek'	comment , 'how,' 'what'
chérir , 'to cherish'	commentaire (le), 'commentary'
cheval (le), 'horse'	commerce (le), 'commerce,' 'trade'
" —, 'on horseback,' 'astute,' 'across'	commissaire , 'commissioner,' 'commissary,' 'superintendent'
chevelure (la), 'hair'	commission (la), 'commission'
chez , 'at,' 'to'	commode (la), 'chest of drawers'
— <i>soi</i> , 'at home'	commun , 'common,' 'average,' 'mutual'
chiffre (le), 'figure'	communication (la), 'communi- cation'
chirurgien (le), 'surgeon'	communiquer , 'to communi- cate'
choisir , 'to choose'	compagnie (la), 'company'
choix (le), 'choice'	compagnon (le), 'companion'
chose (la), 'thing,' 'matter'	complaisance (la), 'compliance,' 'kindness'
ciel (le), 'heavens,' 'sky'	complètement , 'completely'
cingler , 'to sail'	compléter , 'to complete'
cinquante , 'fifty'	composer , 'to compose,' 'form'
circonstance (la), 'circumstance'	<i>se — de</i> , 'to be composed of,' 'con- sist of'
circularaire (la), 'circular letter'	comprendre (irr. v. see <i>prendre</i>), 'to understand,' 'include'
civil , 'civil'	comprimer , 'to suppress'
clair , 'clear'	compter , 'to count,' 'reckon'
clairvoyant , 'clear-sighted,' 'far- seeing'	comte (le), 'count'
clameur (la), 'shout'	concentration (la), 'concentra- tion'
clef (la), 'key'	concentrer , 'to concentrate'
clergé (le), 'clergy'	concernant , 'concerning'
climat (le), 'climate'	conduire (irr. v.), 'to escort,' 'conduct'
clouer , 'to nail'	conduit , see <i>conduire</i>
coalition (la), 'coalition'	conduite (la), 'conduct'
cœur (le), 'heart'	confectionner , 'to make,' 'make up'
coin (le), 'corner,' 'angle'	conflance (la), 'trust,' 'faith'
colline (la), 'hill'	confiant , 'confiding,' 'sanguine'
colonel (le), 'colonel'	confier , 'to entrust'
colonie (la), 'colony'	confirmer , 'to confirm'
colonne (la), 'column'	confusion (la), 'confusion'
combat (le), 'fight,' 'engage- ment'	congé (le), 'leave,' 'holiday'
combattre , 'to fight'	congrès (le), 'congress'
comble (le), 'height'	
comédie (la), 'comedy'	
comète (la), 'comet'	
commandant , 'commander'	
commander , 'to command,' 'order'	
comme , 'as,' 'like,' 'how'	

- connaissance** (la), 'knowledge'
perdre —, 'to become unconscious'
connaître (irr. v.), 'to know'
conquérir (irr. v., see *acquiescer*),
 'to conquer'
conquis, see *conquiescer*
consacrer, 'to consecrate,' 'de-
 vote'
conseil (le), 'advice'
consentir, 'to consent'
conséquence (la), 'consequence,'
 'result'
conserver, 'to keep,' 'preserve'
considération (la), 'considera-
 tion'
consigne (la), 'orders'
consolation (la), 'consolation'
consommer, 'to complete'
conspiration (la), 'conspiracy'
constamment, 'constantly'
constance (la), 'persistence,'
 'constancy'
constant, 'constant'
constitution (la), 'constitution'
consul (le), 'consul'
consultation (la), 'consultation'
contenir (irr. v., see *tenir*), 'to
 contain,' 'restrain'
conter, 'to relate'
contendra, see *contenus*
continuer, 'to continue'
contradiction (la), 'contradiction'
contraire, 'contrary'
au —, 'on the contrary'
contre, 'against'
contremarche (la), 'counter-
 march'
contrevent (le), 'shutter'
convaincre (irr. v., see *vaincre*),
 'to conquer'
convaincu, see *convaincre*
convenable, 'suitable'
conversation (la), 'conversa-
 tion'
- convertir**, 'to convert'
conviction (la), 'conviction'
convoquer, 'to call together'
corbillard (le), 'hearse'
cordon (le), 'string,' 'ribbon'
corne (la), 'horn,' 'corner'
chapeau à trois —s, 'cocked hat'
corps (le), 'body'
correspondance (la), 'corre-
 spondence'
Corse (la), 'Corsica'
cortège (le), 'procession'
costume (le), 'dress,' 'costume'
côte (la), 'coast,' 'slope,' 'hill'
côté (le), 'side,' 'direction'
mettre de —, 'to put aside'
à — de, 'by the side of'
du — de, 'in the direction of'
côtoyer, 'to skirt'
coucher, 'to lay,' 'lie'
se —, 'to go to bed'
— en jour, 'to aim at'
couler, 'to flow'
coup (le), 'blow,' 'shot,' 'stroke'
un — de fusil, 'gunshot'
un — d'œil, 'glance'
couper, 'to cut'
cour (la), 'court,' 'courtyard'
courage (le), 'courage'
courant (le), 'current,' 'stream'
mettre au — de, 'to acquaint with'
courber, 'to bend'
se —, 'to bow'
courir (irr. v.), 'to run'
couronne (la), 'crown'
courrier (le), 'courier'
cours (le), 'course'
course (la), 'ride,' 'walk,' 'trip'
court, see *courir*
courtisan (le), 'courtesan'
coussin (le), 'cushion'
couteau (le), 'knife'
coûter, 'to cost'
couvert (le), 'place at table'
couvrir (irr. v.), 'to cover'

- craindre (irr. v.), 'to fear'
 craint, see *craindre*
 crampe (la), 'cramp'
 cravate (la), 'neck-tie,' 'scarf'
 crête (la), 'crest'
 creuser, 'to dig'
 cri (le), 'cry'
 crier, 'to cry,' 'shout'
 critique, 'critical'
 croire (irr. v.), 'to think,' 'believe'
 croisière (la), 'cruise,' 'fleet of
 cruisers'
 croissant, see *croître*
 croit, see *croire*
 croître (irr. v.), 'to grow'
 croyais, see *croire*
 cru, see *croire*
 crucifix (le), 'crucifix'
 cruel, 'cruel,' 'sad'
 crut, see *croire*
 culbute, 'to overthrow'
 culotte (la), 'breeches'

 d'ailleurs, 'besides'
 danger (le), 'danger'
 dans, 'in,' 'into'
 dater, 'to date'
 d'avance, 'beforehand'
 de, 'of,' 'from,' 'with,' etc.
 — *cette façon*, 'in this way'
 — *nouveau*, 'once more'
 — *plus en plus*, 'more and more'
 — *sorte que*, 'so that'
 débânder, 'to unbind,' 'slacken,'
 'disband'
 se —, 'to leave the ranks'
 débarquement (le), 'disembarka-
 tion'
 débarrasser, 'to clear'
 débattre (irr. v., see *battre*), 'to
 discuss,' 'debate'
 déborder, 'to overflow,' 'out-
 flank'
 déboucher, 'to open out,' 'go out'
 debout, 'upright,' 'standing'
 débris (le), 'rubbish,' 'remains'

 décembre, *m.*, 'December'
 déchiffrer, 'to decipher,' 'make
 out'
 décider, 'to decide'
 se —, 'to make up one's mind'
 décisif, 'decisive'
 déclarer, 'to declare'
 décorer, 'to decorate'
 découvrir (irr. v., see *couvrir*),
 'to discover'
 défection (la), 'desertion'
 défendre, 'to defend,' 'forbid'
 défense (la), 'defence'
 défilé, 'to de file'
 degré (le), 'degree,' 'step'
 déjà, 'already'
 déjeuner, 'to breakfast'
 déjouer, 'to baffle,' 'thwart'
 délire (le), 'delirium'
 demander, 'to ask'
 démarche (la), 'step,' 'conduct,'
 'measure'
 démasquer, 'to unmask'
 demeure (la), 'dwelling'
 demeurer, 'to dwell,' 'remain'
 demi (le), 'half'
 demi-tour (le), 'half-turn'
 démolir, 'to demolish'
 démoraliser, 'to demoralise'
 départ (le), 'departure'
 dépasser, 'to outstrip,' 'surpass'
 dépêche (la), 'dispatch,' 'tele-
 gram'
 dépendant de, 'belonging to'
 déplorable, 'deplorable'
 déployer, 'to display,' 'deploy'
 déportation (la), 'transportation'
 déposer, 'to lay,' 'place,' 'lodge'
 depuis, 'since,' 'from'
 députation (la), 'deputation'
 en —, 'as a deputation'
 député (le), 'deputy'
 dernier, 'last'
 dérober, 'stolen'
 à la *derobée*, 'on the sly,' 'by stealth'
 dérober, 'to steal away'

déroute (la), 'rout'
 derrière (le), 'rear'
 derrière, 'behind'
 dès, 'from,' 'since'
 — *lors*, 'from that time'
 désastre (le), 'disaster'
 descendre, 'to descend'
 — *à terre*, 'to disembark'
 — *de*, 'to dismount from'
 désespérant, 'heartbreaking'
 désespoir (le), 'despair'
 désigner, 'to designate'
 désir (le), 'desire'
 désirer, 'to desire'
 désordre (le), 'disorder'
 désorganiser, 'to disorganise'
 désormais, 'henceforth'
 dessaisir (se) de, 'to give up,'
 'part with'
 dessin (le), 'drawing,' 'design,'
 'plan'
 dessus, 'upon'
 destination (la), 'destination'
 destinée (la), 'destiny'
 destiner, 'to destine'
 détachement (le), 'detachment,'
 'indifference'
 détail (le), 'detail'
 détaillé, 'detailed'
 détendre, 'to relax'
 détermination (la), 'determination'
 déterminer, 'to persuade'
 détestable, 'hateful'
 détourner, 'to turn aside'
 détruire (irr. v.), 'to destroy'
 détruit, see *détruire*
 deux, 'two'
 devait, see *devoir*
 devant (le), 'front,' 'forepart'
 — *prendre les —s*, 'to take the lead'
 devant, 'before' (*of place*)
 devenir (irr. v., see *venir*), 'to
 become'
 devenu, see *devenir*

deviner, 'to guess'
 devoir (le), 'duty'
 devoir, 'to owe,' 'be about to'
 dévorer, 'to devour'
 dévoué, 'devoted'
 devrait, see *devoir*
 dicter, 'to dictate,' 'suggest'
 Dieu (le), 'God'
 différent, 'different,' 'various'
 dimanche (le), 'Sunday'
 dimension (la), 'size'
 dîner (le), 'dinner'
 dîner, 'to dine'
 dira, see *dire*
 dire (irr. v.), 'to say'
 diriger, 'to direct'
 disant, see *dire*
 discret, 'discreet'
 disent, see *dire*
 disparaître, 'to disappear'
 disponible, 'available'
 disposer, 'to dispose,' 'incline'
 disposition (la), 'disposition,'
 'arrangement,' 'disposal'
 disputer, 'to dispute'
 dissiper, 'to scatter,' 'dissipate'
 dissoudre (irr. v., see *absoudre*),
 'to dissolve'
 dissous, see *dissoudre*
 distance (la), 'distance'
 distraction (la), 'distraction,'
 'amusement'
 distraire, 'to divert,' 'draw off'
 dit, see *dire*
 divers, 'different'
 diviser, 'to divide'
 division (la), 'division'
 docteur (le), 'doctor'
 dois, see *devoir*
 doit, see *devoir*
 domestique (le or la), 'servant'
 dominer, 'to master,' 'overlook'
 dompter, 'to tame,' 'subdue'
 donc, 'then,' 'accordingly'
 donner, 'to give'
 — *sur*, 'to look upon'

- dont, genitive of relative *qui*
 dorer, 'to gild'
 dormir (irr. v.), 'to sleep'
 doubler, 'to double'
 douceur (la), 'gentleness,' 'mildness'
 douleur (la), 'pain,' 'grief'
 douloureux, 'painful'
 doute (le), 'doubt'
 sans —, 'doubtless'
 douter, 'to doubt'
 se — *de*, 'to suspect'
 douteux, 'doubtful'
 doux (douce), 'gentle,' 'sweet'
 dragon (le), 'dragon'
 drapeau (le), 'flag,' 'colours'
 dresser, 'to erect,' 'raise,' 'prepare'
 droit (le), 'right'
 à — *e*, 'to the right'
 dû (due), see *devoir*
 duc (le), 'duke'
 durer, 'to last'
- ébranler, 'to shake'
 ébullition (l'), *f.*, 'ebullition,' 'boiling over'
 échafaud (l'), *m.*, 'scaffold'
 échanger, 'to exchange'
 échapper, 'to escape'
 échec (l'), *m.*, 'check'
 échelonner, 'to draw up,' 'post'
 éclair (l'), *m.*, 'lightning,' 'flash'
 éclairer, 'to light up,' 'lighten'
 éclater, 'to burst'
 écouler (s'), 'to slip by,' 'pass away'
 écouter, 'to listen to'
 écraser, 'to crush'
 écrire (s'), 'to cry out,' 'exclaim'
 écrire (irr. v.), 'to write'
 écrit, see *écrire*
 écrivit, see *écrire*
 écu (l'), *m.*, 'crown,' 'shield'
 un petit —, 'half a crown'
- écuyer, 'rider'
 botte à l'écuyère, 'riding-boot'
 effet (l'), *m.*, 'effect'
 en —, 'really,' 'indeed'
 effigie (l'), *m.*, 'effigy'
 effort (l'), *m.*, 'effort'
 effrayer, 'to frighten'
 effroi (l'), *m.*, 'fear,' 'fright'
 égal, 'equal'
 élançer, 'to shoot,' 'dart'
 s' —, 'to rush,' 'dash'
 Elbe (l'), *f.*, 'Elba'
 élevé, 'raised,' 'lofty'
 élever, 'to raise'
 s' —, 'to rise,' 'arise'
 élite (l'), 'picked'
 éloigné, 'distant'
 éloignement (l'), *m.*, 'distance,' 'absence,' 'removal'
 éloigner, 'to remove'
 s' —, 'to withdraw'
 émaner, 'to emanate'
 embargo (l'), *m.*, 'embargo'
 embarquement (l'), *m.*, 'embarkation'
 embarras (l'), *m.*, 'embarrassment'
 embrassement (l'), *m.*, 'embrace'
 embrasser, 'to embrace'
 embûche (l'), *f.*, 'ambush'
 émettre (irr. v., see *mettre*), 'to send out'
 éminence (l'), *f.*, 'height'
 émis, see *émettre*
 émissaire (l'), *m.*, 'emissary'
 emparer (s') *de*, 'to take possession of,' 'seize'
 empêcher, 'to prevent'
 empereur (l'), *m.*, 'emperor'
 empire (l'), *m.*, 'empire,' 'control'
 employer, 'to use,' 'employ'
 emportement (l'), *m.*, 'transport'
 emporter, 'to carry off'

- empresser** (s'), 'to be eager to,'
'hasten'
- en** (prep.), 'in,' 'into'
- *avant*, 'in the rear'
 - *avant*, 'in front,' 'forward'
 - *dehors*, 'besides'
 - *effet*, 'indeed'
 - *face de*, 'opposite,' 'in front of'
 - *outin*, 'in addition'
 - *regard*, 'opposite'
 - *retard*, 'late'
 - *traverse de*, 'across'
- encante** (l'), f., 'enclosure'
- enchaîner**, 'to rivet,' 'chain,'
'fetter'
- encombrement** (l'), m., 'obstruction'
- encombrer de**, 'to encumber with'
- encore**, 'yet,' 'still,' 'again,'
'moreover'
- endroit** (l'), m., 'place,' 'spot'
- enfant** (l'), m., 'child'
- enfermer**, 'to shut up,' 'shut in'
- enfiler**, 'to thread,' 'go through'
- enfin**, 'at last'
- enfoncer**, 'to break in,' 'plunge'
- enfuir** (s'), 'to flee'
- engager**, 'to engage,' 'invite,'
'enlist'
- s—, 'to begin'
- engourdissement** (l'), m.,
'numbness,' 'torpor'
- enjoindre** (irr. v., see *joindre*),
'to enjoin'
- enlever**, 'to carry away,' 'raise'
- ennemi** (l'), m., 'enemy'
- ennemi** (adj.), 'of the enemy'
- énorme**, 'enormous'
- ensemble**, 'together'
- ensuite**, 'then,' 'next,' 'afterwards'
- entamer**, 'to begin,' 'make the first cut into'
- entasser**, 'to heap up'
- entendre**, 'to hear,' 'understand'
- enthousiasme** (l'), m., 'enthusiasm'
- entier**, 'entire,' 'whole'
- entièrement**, 'entirely'
- entourer**, 'to surround'
- entre**, 'between,' 'amongst'
- entraîné** (l'), m., 'dash'
- entraîner**, 'to carry away,' 'drag'
- entrée** (l'), f., 'entrance'
- entrefaite**, see note, p. 55 l. 16
- entreprise** (l'), f., 'enterprise'
- entrer dans**, 'to enter'
- envahir**, 'to invade,' 'seize upon'
- envahissement** (l'), m., 'invasion'
- envelopper**, 'to wrap up,' 'cover'
- environ**, 'about'
- environnant**, 'surrounding'
- environner**, 'to surround'
- environs** (le-), m., 'neighbourhood'
- envoyer** (irr. v.), 'to send'
- épais**, 'thick'
- épargner**, 'to spare'
- épars**, 'scattered'
- épée** (l'), f., 'sword'
- éperon** (l'), m., 'spur'
- éprouver**, 'to feel,' 'experience'
- équipage** (l'), m., 'crew'
- erreur** (l'), f., 'error,' 'mistake'
- escadron** (l'), m., 'squadron'
- Escout** (l'), m., 'Scheldt'
- escorte** (l'), f., 'escort,' 'convoy'
- espace** (l'), m., 'space,' 'room'
- espèce** (l'), f., 'kind,' 'sort'
- espérance** (l'), f., 'hope'
- espérer**, 'to hope'
- espoir** (l'), m., 'hope'
- esprit** (l'), m., 'mind'
- *de vin*, 'spirits of wine'
- essayer**, 'to try,' 'try on'
- est** (l'), m., 'east'
- estime** (l'), m., 'esteem'
- estomac** (l'), m., 'stomach'
- et**, 'and'
- établir**, 'to establish'
- étage** (l'), m., 'stage,' 'floor,'
'storey'
- était**, see *être*

- état (l'), *m.*, 'state,' 'condition'
 état-major (l'), *m.*, 'staff'
 États-Unis (les), *m.*, 'United States'
 étendre (irr. *v.*, see *craindre*), 'to put out'
 s'—, 'to die out'
 étendre, 'to stretch out'
 éternel, 'perpetual'
 étiqueter, 'to ticket'
 étoile (l'), *f.*, 'star'
 étonnement (l'), *m.*, 'astonishment'
 étonner, 'to astonish'
 étouffer, 'to stifle'
 étranger (l'), *m.*, 'stranger'
 être (irr. *v.*), 'to be'
 étrier (l'), *m.*, 'stirrup'
 étroit, 'narrow'
 européen, 'European'
 eusse, see *avoir*
 eux-mêmes (pl of *lui-même*), 'themselves'
 d'—, 'of their own accord'
 éveiller, 'to arouse'
 événement (l'), *m.*, 'issue,' 'event'
 exaltation (l'), *f.*, 'excitement'
 exalter, 'to raise'
 s'—, 'to become excited'
 examiner, 'to examine'
 excepté, 'except'
 exception (l'), *f.*, 'exception'
 à l'— *de*, 'except'
 excessif, 'excessive'
 excursion (l'), *f.*, 'excursion'
 excuse (l'), *f.*, 'excuse'
 exécuter, 'to execute'
 exécuteur (l'), *m.*, 'executor'
 — *testamentaire*, 'executor of a will'
 exécution (l'), *f.*, 'execution,' 'fulfilment'
 mettre à —, 'to execute'
 exemple (l'), *m.*, 'example'
 exercice (l'), *m.*, 'exercise'
- exhaler, 'to exhale'
 exiger, 'to require,' 'exact'
 exil (l'), *m.*, 'exile'
 existant, 'existing'
 existence (l'), *f.*, 'existence'
 exister, 'to exist'
 expédier, 'to dispatch,' 'forward'
 expédition (l'), *f.*, 'expedition,' 'sending out'
 expirer, 'to expire,' 'die'
 explosion (l'), *f.*, 'explosion'
 exposer, 'to display'
 exprimer, 'to express'
 extirper, 'to extirpate'
 extraction (l'), *f.*, 'getting out,' 'working'
 extrême, 'extreme'
 extrémité (l'), *f.*, 'end,' 'extremity'
- face (la), 'face,' 'front'
 en — *de*, 'in the face of'
 faire — *a*, 'to face'
 facile, 'easy'
 facilité (la), 'opportunity,' 'facility'
 faction (la), 'faction'
 faible, 'weak,' 'feeble'
 faire (irr. *v.*), 'to make,' 'do,' 'cause,' 'say'
 — *appeler*, 'to summon'
 — *être*, 'to be'
 — *halte*, 'to halt'
 — *venir*, 'to summon,' 'send for'
 fait, see *faire*
 fallait, see *falloir*
 falloir (irr. *v.*), 'to be necessary,' 'must'
 famille (la), 'family'
 fastueusement, 'pompously'
 fatigant, 'fatiguing,' 'tiresome'
 fatigue (la), 'fatigue'
 fatiguer, 'to tire'
 faubourg (le), 'suburb'
 faudra, see *falloir*
 faute (la), 'fault'
 — *de*, 'for want of'

- faveur (la), 'favour'
 favorable, 'favourable'
 fédération (la), 'federation'
 fédéré, 'federated'
 feignit, see *feindre*
 feindre (irr. v.) 'to feign'
 félicitation (la), 'congratulation'
 féliciter, 'to congratulate'
 femme (la), 'woman,' 'wife'
 fenêtre (la), 'window'
 fer (le), 'iron'
 le — à cheval, 'horseshoe'
 le — blanc, 'tin'
 ferme (la), 'farm'
 fermentation (la), 'fermentation'
 fermer, 'to shut'
 fête (la), 'festival'
 feu (le), 'fire'
 février, *m*, 'February'
 fidèle, 'faithful'
 fidélité (la), 'fidelity,' 'faithfulness'
 fièvre (la), 'fever'
 fils (le), 'son'
 fin (la), 'end'
 finir, 'to finish'
 fit, see *faire*
 fixe, 'fixed,' 'steady'
 fixer, 'to fix,' 'settle'
 se —, 'to be established'
 flacon (le), 'bottle'
 flanc (le), 'flank'
 flétrir, 'to tarnish'
 fleur de lis, 'lily'
 flot (le), 'flood'
 flottille (la), 'flotilla'
 foi (la), 'faith'
 foie (le), 'liver'
 fois (la), 'time,' 'occasion'
 folle (la), 'madness'
 fomentation (la), 'fomentation'
 fonderie (la), 'foundry'
 force (la), 'strength,' 'power'
 à grande —, 'vigorously'
 de vive —, 'by might and main'
 forcer, 'to force'
 forêt (la), 'forest'
 forfait, 'crime'
 —, 'by contract'
 forme (la), 'shape'
 former, 'to form,' 'compose'
 fort (le), 'fort'
 fort, (adj.) 'strong'
 (adv.) 'very'
 fortifier, 'to fortify'
 fortune (la), 'fortune'
 fosse (la), 'ditch,' 'grave,' 'hole'
 fou (folle), 'mad'
 foudre (la), 'lightning'
 foule (la), 'crowd,' 'mob'
 fournir, 'to furnish'
 foyer (le), 'hearth'
 fraîchir, 'to freshen'
 frais (fraiche), 'fresh'
 français, 'French'
 frapper, 'to strike,' 'nunt'
 fraterniser, 'to fraternise'
 frayer, 'to beat out,' 'open out'
 frégate (la), 'frigate'
 frénétique, 'frantic'
 fréquent, 'frequent'
 frère (le), 'brother'
 froid (le), 'cold'
 avoir —, 'to be cold'
 froideur (la), 'coolness'
 front (le), 'forehead,' 'front'
 frugal, 'frugal'
 fuir (irr. v.), 'to flee'
 fut, see *faire*
 funèbre, 'funeral'
 fureur (la), 'fury,' 'rage'
 fusil (le), 'gun'
 futur, 'future'
 gage (le), 'pledge'
 gagner, 'to gain,' 'win,' 'prevail'
 gai, 'gay,' 'merry'
 gain (le), 'gain'
 galop (le), 'gallop'
 garde (le), 'guard,' 'keeper'
 la —, 'care,' 'protection'
 garder, 'to keep,' 'guard'

gardien (le), 'guardian,' 'keeper'	guérison (le), 'stand,' 'small table'
garnir , 'to furnish,' 'adorn,' 'fit up'	guerre (la), 'war'
garnison (la), 'garrison'	guerrier (le), 'warrior'
garniture (la), 'furniture,' 'trimming'	guider , 'to guide'
gauche , 'left,' 'awkward'	guise (la), 'way'
gémir , 'to groan'	<i>en — de</i> , 'instead of,' 'for'
général (le), 'general'	habiller , 'to dress'
générale (la), 'alarm'	habit (l'), <i>m</i> , 'dress coat,' 'garment'
généreux , 'generous'	habitant (l'), <i>m</i> , 'inhabitant'
Gènes , <i>f</i> , 'Genoa'	habiter , 'to inhabit,' 'dwell in'
génie (le), 'genius,' 'engineers'	habitude (l'), <i>f</i> , 'habit,' 'custom'
genou (le), 'knee'	<i>avoir l'—</i> , 'to be accustomed'
gens (les), 'people'	habituellement , 'habitually'
geôlier (le), 'jailor'	habiter , 'to accustom'
gilet (le), 'waistcoat'	<i>s'—</i> , 'to grow accustomed'
glace (la), 'mirror,' 'ice'	haie (la), 'hedge'
glacé , 'glazed,' 'icy,' 'cold'	haletant , 'breathless,' 'panting'
glacial , 'icy'	halte (la), 'halt,' 'stop'
gloire (la), 'glory'	hameau (le), 'hamlet'
glorieux , 'glorious'	haranguer , 'to harangue'
golfe (le), 'gulf'	hasard (le), 'chance'
goût (le), 'taste'	<i>par —</i> , 'accidentally'
goutte (la), 'drop'	hâte (la), 'haste'
gouvernement (le), 'government'	<i>à la —</i> , 'hastily'
gouverneur (le), 'governor'	haut (le), 'top'
grâce (la), 'grace,' 'thanks,' — à, 'thanks to'	<i>du — en bas</i> , 'from top to bottom'
grand , 'great,' 'grand,' 'chief,' 'big'	haut , 'high'
<i>le — chemin</i> , 'highroad'	hauteur (la), 'height'
<i>le — maître</i> , 'grandmaster'	<i>à la — de</i> , 'off'
<i>le — maréchal</i> , 'marshal'	hélas , 'alas'
<i>la — route</i> , 'main road'	héroïsme (l'), <i>m</i> , 'heroism'
grandeur (la), 'greatness,' 'size'	héros (le), 'hero'
grave , 'serious'	hésiter , 'to hesitate'
gravement , 'gravely'	heure (l'), <i>f</i> , 'hour,' 'time'
graver , 'to engrave'	<i>à dix —s</i> , 'at ten o'clock'
grenadier (le), 'grenadier'	histoire (l'), <i>f</i> , 'history'
gros (grosse), 'big'	hiver (l'), <i>m</i> , 'winter'
grossir , 'to increase,' 'enlarge,' 'swell'	hommages (les), <i>m</i> , 'respects'
groupe (le), 'group,' 'company'	homme (l'), <i>m</i> , 'man'
	honte (la), 'shame'
	<i>avoir —</i> , 'to be ashamed'

honteux , 'ashamed'	imprévoyance (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'want of foresight'
horizon (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'horizon'	imprévu , 'unexpected'
horreur (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'horror'	inactif , 'inactive'
hors de , 'out,' 'beyond,' 'beside,' 'past'	inconnu , 'unknown'
hospitalier , 'hospitable'	inconvenient (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'inconvenience,' 'disadvantage'
hospitalité (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'hospitality'	incroyable , 'incredible'
hostile , 'hostile'	indécision (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'indecision'
hostilité (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'hostility'	indigné , 'indignant'
hôte (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'host'	indiquer , 'to indicate'
hôtel (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'hotel'	indirect , 'indirect'
— <i>de la mairie</i> , 'town-hall'	indispensable , 'indispensable'
humain , 'human'	indisposition (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'ailment'
humidité (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'dampness'	individu (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'individual'
humiliation (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'humiliation'	indulgence (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'indulgence'
hussard (le), 'hussar'	inévitabile , 'inevitable'
ici , 'here'	infanterie (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'infantry'
idée (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'idea'	inférieur , 'lower,' 'inferior'
ignorer , 'to be ignorant of,' 'ignore'	infortune (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'misfortune'
île (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'island'	infuser , 'to infuse'
illuminer , 'to illuminate'	inimitié (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'hostility'
illusion (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'illusion'	inquiétude (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'uneasiness'
illustre , 'famous'	insalubre , 'unhealthy'
imiter , 'to imitate'	inscription (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'inscription'
immédiatement , 'immediately'	insensé , 'mad' 'frantic'
immense , 'immense,' 'huge'	insensible , 'imperceptible'
imminent , 'imminent'	insomnie (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'fit of sleeplessness'
immobile , 'immovable,' 'motionless'	inspecter , 'to inspect'
immoler , 'to sacrifice'	inspirer , 'to inspire'
immortel , 'immortal'	installation (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'establishment'
impérial , 'imperial'	instance (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'entreaty'
impérte (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'want of skill'	instant (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'instant'
impliquer , 'to implicate'	instigation (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'instigation'
implorer , 'to beg,' 'implore'	instinct (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'instinct'
important , 'important'	instinctif , 'instinctive'
importer , 'to matter,' 'signify'	institution (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'institution'
imposer , 'to impose,' 'enjoin,' 'force upon'	instruction (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'instruction'
impossible , 'impossible'	intelligence (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'intelligence'
impression (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'printing,' 'impression'	intendant (l'), <i>m.</i> , 'director,' 'steward'
	intensité (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'intensity'
	intention (l'), <i>f.</i> , 'intention,' 'purpose'

interdire (111 v, see <i>dire</i>), 'to forbid'	lancer, 'to send forth,' 'throw'
intéressant, 'interesting'	lancier (le), 'lancier'
intérêt (1'), <i>m</i> , 'interest'	large, 'broad,' 'wide,' 'large'
intérieur (1'), <i>m</i> , 'inside'	<i>au</i> — (nautical), 'in the offing'
<i>dans son</i> —, 'in one's own house'	larme (la), 'tear'
interroger, 'to question'	lasser, 'to weary,' 'tire out'
interrompre, 'to interrupt'	laver, 'to wash'
intersection (1'), <i>f</i> , 'intersection'	lecture (la), 'reading'
intervalle (1'), <i>m</i> , 'interval'	léger, 'light'
intervention (1'), <i>f</i> , 'intervention'	léguer, 'to leave as a legacy'
intépide, 'fearless'	le moins, 'the least'
inutile, 'useless'	lendemain (le), 'next day'
inviter, 'to invite'	lent, 'slow'
irai, see <i>aller</i>	lenteur (la), 'slowness'
isoler, 'to isolate'	lequel, 'which'
Italie (1'), <i>f</i> , 'Italy'	lettre (la), 'letter'
italien, 'Italian'	leur (possess. adj.), 'their'
	lever, 'to raise'
	<i>se</i> — 'to get up,' 'rise'
	— <i>la consigne</i> , 'to rescind orders'
jamais, 'never'	lèvre (la), 'lip'
jardin (le), 'garden'	libéral, 'liberal'
je, 'I'	liberté (la), 'freedom'
jeter, 'to throw,' 'cast'	libre, 'free'
— <i>un cri</i> , 'to utter a cry'	librement, 'freely,' 'at large'
joie (la), 'joy'	licencier, 'to disband'
joignant, see <i>joindre</i>	lieu (le), 'place'
joli, 'pretty'	<i>avoir</i> —, 'to take place'
jonction (la), 'junction'	<i>au</i> — <i>de</i> , 'instead of'
joue (la), 'cheek'	lieue (la), 'league' (2½ miles)
<i>coucher en</i> —, 'to take aim at'	ligne (la), 'line'
jouer, 'to play'	limite (la), 'limit,' 'bound'
jour (le), 'day,' 'light'	linge (le), 'linen' (household)
journée (la), 'day'	lion (le), 'lion'
juger, 'to judge'	lire (irr. v.), 'to read'
juillet, <i>m</i> , 'July'	lit (le), 'bed'
jusqu'à (prep.), 'as far as,' 'until'	Lavurne, <i>f</i> , 'Leghorn'
— <i>ce que</i> (conj. with subj.), 'until'	livre (le), 'book'
justice (la), 'justice'	livre (la), 'pound'
	livrer, 'to surrender,' 'hand over'
là, 'there'	loger, 'to lodge'
— <i>haut</i> , 'up above'	logis (le), 'lodging,' 'house'
laisser, 'to allow,' 'let,' 'leave'	loi (la), 'law'
	long (longue), 'long'

- longer, 'to run along by,' 'keep along'
 longtemps, 'a long time'
 lorsque, 'when'
 lourdeur, 'heaviness'
 loyauté (la), 'fidelity,' 'honour'
 lui, 'him,' 'her,' 'it,' etc.
 lundi (le), 'Monday'
 lune (la), 'moon'
 lunette (la), 'telescope'
 lutte (la), 'struggle'
 lutter, 'to struggle'
- magique, 'magic,' 'magical'
 magistrat (le), 'magistrate'
 magnanimité (la), 'magnanimity'
 mai, *m.*, 'May'
 maigre, 'thin,' 'lean'
 faire —, 'to fast'
 main (la), 'hand,' 'handwriting'
 maintenir (irr. v. see *tenir*), 'to maintain'
 maire (le), 'mayor'
 mais, 'but'
 maison (la), 'house'
 à la —, 'at home'
 maître (le), 'master'
 maîtriser, 'to master'
 majeur, 'greater'
 mal (le), 'evil'
 mal (adv.), 'badly,' 'wrong'
 malade, 'ill'
 maladie (la), 'disease'
 malgré, 'in spite of'
 malheur (le), 'misfortune'
 malheureusement, 'unfortunately'
 maltraiter, 'to ill-treat'
 manifeste, 'obvious'
 manoeuvre (le), 'workman'
 manoeuvre (la), 'working,' 'handling,' 'rigging'
 manquer, 'to lack,' 'fail,' 'miss,' 'be wanting in'
 mansarde (la), 'garret,' 'attic'
 manteau (le), 'cloak'
 manufacture (la), 'factory'
 marais (le), 'marsh'
 marbre (le), 'marble'
 marchand (le), 'merchant'
 marche (la), 'march,' 'step'
 se mettre en —, 'to set out'
 marché (le), 'bargain,' 'market'
 par-dessus le —, 'into the bargain'
 marcher, 'to advance,' 'walk'
 maréchal (le), 'marshal'
 marine (la), 'navy'
 marquer, 'to mark'
 mars, *m.*, 'March'
 matelas (le), 'mattress'
 matériel (le), 'stock,' 'stores'
 matin (le), 'morning'
 en —, 'in the morning'
 matinée (la), 'morning'
 mauvais, 'bad'
 me, see *je*
 mèche (la), 'wick,' 'match,' 'fuse'
 mécontent, 'dissatisfied'
 médecin (le), 'doctor'
 médicament (le), 'remedy,' 'medicine'
 mêler, 'to mix'
 se — *de*, 'to interfere in' 'take part in'
 même (adj.), 'same'
 moi —, 'myself'
 même (adv.), 'even'
 être *à* —, 'to be able'
 de —, 'likewise'
 mémoire (le), 'memoir'
 mémoire (la), 'memory'
 menacer, 'to threaten'
 mener, 'to bring'
 mer (la), 'sea'
 en —, 'at sea'
 mère (la), 'mother'
 merveille (la), 'wonder,' 'miracle'
 à —, 'capitally'

mesure (la), 'measure'

se mettre en —, 'to prepare one's self'

met, see *mettre*

métal (le), 'metal'

mètre (le), 'metre'

mets, see *mettre*

mette, see *mettre*

mettiez, see *mettre*

mettre (irr. v.), 'to put'

— *au net*, 'to make a fair copy of'

— *à la voile*, 'to set sail'

mettront, see *mettre*

meuble (le), 'piece of furniture'

meubler, 'to furnish'

meure, see *mourir*

midi (le), 'midday'

mieux, 'better'

le —, 'the best'

mi-jambe, 'middle of the leg'

milieu (le), 'middle'

militaire, 'military'

mille (le), 'mile,' 'thousand'

millier (le), 'thousand'

mince, 'slender'

mine (la), 'look,' 'air,' 'pretence'

ministériel, 'ministerial'

minuit (le), 'midnight'

minute (la), 'minute'

miraculeux, 'miraculous'

mis, see *mettre*

misère (la), 'misery,' 'distress,'

'poverty'

mission (la), 'mission'

mit, see *mettre*

modération (la), 'moderation'

mœurs (les), *f.*, 'manners,' 'customs'

moi-même, 'myself'

mois (le), 'month'

mollir, 'to soften'

moment (le), 'moment'

monarque (le), 'monarch'

monde (le), 'world'

tout le —, 'every one'

monnaie (la), 'money,' 'mint'

monsieur (messieurs), 'gentleman'

montagne (la), 'mountain'

monter, 'to ascend'

monticule (le), 'hillock'

montre (la), 'watch'

montrer, 'to show'

morceau (le), 'bit,' 'piece'

moribund, 'dying'

mort, see *mourir*

mort (le), 'dead man'

mort (la), 'death'

mortel, 'mortal'

mot (le), 'word'

mouiller, 'to anchor,' 'wet'

moulin (le), 'mill'

— *à vent*, 'wind-mill'

mourir (irr. v.), 'to die'

mouton (le), 'sheep'

mouvement (le), 'motion,' 'impulse'

moyen (le), 'means'

multiplier, 'to multiply'

se —, 'to exert one's self to the utmost'

munir de, 'to furnish with'

munitions (les), *f.*, 'stores'

mur (le), 'wall'

naître (irr. v.), 'to be born'

nankin (le), 'nankeen'

nappe (la), 'cloth'

nation (la), 'nation'

national, 'national'

navire (le), 'ship'

né, see *naître*

ne, 'not'

ne — *guère*, 'scarcely'

ne — *jamais*, 'never'

ne — *pas*, 'not'

ne — *plus*, 'no more'

ne — *point*, 'not at all'

ne — *que*, 'only'

néanmoins, 'nevertheless'

nécessaire, 'necessary'

nécessaire (le), 'dressing-case'

nécessité (la), 'necessity'
 nécessiter, 'to necessitate'
 négociant (le), 'merchant'
 ni . . ne, 'neither . . nor'
 nom (le), 'name'
 nombre (le), 'number'
 nommer, 'to nominate,' 'name'
 non, 'no,' 'not'
 non-succès (le), 'want of success'
 nord (le), 'north'
 notable (adj.), 'considerable,' 'important'
 notable (le), 'person of consideration'
 notre, 'our'
 nôtre (le), 'ours'
 nouer, 'to tie,' 'knot'
 — *des intelligences*, 'to enter into communication'
 nous, 'we,' 'us'
 nouveau (nouvelle), 'new'
 nouvelle (la), 'news'
 noyau (le), 'kernel'
 noyer, 'to drown'
 nuage (le), 'cloud'
 nuit (la), 'night'

objet (l'), *m.*, 'object'
 obliger, 'to oblige,' 'compel'
 oblique, 'slanting'
 obscurité (l'), *f.*, 'darkness'
 observation, (l'), *f.*, 'observation'
 en —, 'to reconnoitre'
 observatoire (l'), *m.*, 'observatory,' 'look-out'
 observer, 'to observe'
 obtenir (irr. v., see *tenir*), 'to obtain'
 occasion (l'), *f.*, 'opportunity'
 occident (l'), *m.*, 'west'
 occuper, 'to occupy'
 s' — *de*, 'to be busy about'
 octobre, *m.*, 'October'
 œil (l'), *m.*, 'eye'
 œuvre (l'), *f.*, 'work'

offensive (l'), *f.*, 'the offensive'
 office (l'), *m.*, 'duty'
 officier (l'), *m.*, 'officer'
 offrir (irr. v.), 'to offer'
 olivier (l'), *m.*, 'olive-tree'
 onze, 'eleven'
 opérer, 'to operate,' 'work,' 'perform'
 opinion (l'), *f.*, 'opinion'
 opposer, 'to oppose,' 'resist'
 s' — *à*, 'to oppose'
 opposite, 'opposite'
 à l' — *de*, 'opposite'
 oppression (l'), *f.*, 'tightness,' 'pressure'
 opprobre (l'), *m.*, 'shame'
 or (l'), *m.*, 'gold'
 oranger (l'), *m.*, 'orange-tree'
 ordinaire, 'usual,' 'customary'
 ordinairement, 'usually'
 ordonner, 'to order,' 'command'
 ordre (l'), *m.*, 'order,' 'command'
 oreiller (l'), *m.*, 'pillow'
 organe (l'), *m.*, 'organ'
 organisation (l'), *f.*, 'organisation'
 organiser, 'to organise'
 orient (l'), *m.*, 'east'
 orner, 'to ornament'
 oser, 'to dare'
 ôter, 'to remove,' 'take away'
 ou, 'or'
 où, 'where,' 'in which,' 'when'
 oublier, 'to forget'
 ouest (l'), *m.*, 'west'
 oui, 'yes'
 ouvert, see *ouvrir*
 ouverture (l'), *f.*, 'overture,' 'opening'
 ouvrage (l'), *m.*, 'work'
 ouvrier (l'), *m.*, 'workman'
 ouvrir (irr. v.), 'to open'

pacifique, 'pacific'
 pair (le), 'peer'

- paix (la), 'peace'
 palais (le), 'palace'
 pantoufle (la), 'slipper'
 papier (le), 'paper'
 par, 'by'
 — *jour*, 'a day'
 — *conséquent*, 'consequently'
 paraître, see *paraître*
 paraître (irr. v.), 'to appear'
 parc (le), 'park'
 parce que, 'because'
 pardonner à, 'to pardon'
 pareil 'alike,' 'similar,' 'such'
 parent (le), 'relative,' 'parent'
 parfaitement, 'perfectly'
 parfois, 'sometimes'
 parler, 'to talk,' 'speak'
 parmi, 'among'
 parole (la), 'word'
 partager, 'to share'
 parti (le), 'party,' 'side,' 'way'
 prendre le — de (with verb), 'to make
 up one's mind to'
 partie (la), 'part,' 'portion,' 'con-
 test,' 'game'
 partir (irr. v., see *dormir*), 'to set
 out'
 partout, 'everywhere'
 parut, see *paraître*
 paru, see *paraître*
 parvenir à (irr. v., see *venir*), 'to
 reach,' 'attain,' 'succeed'
 pas (le), 'pace,' 'step'
 passage (le), 'passage'
 passer, 'to happen,' 'pass,' 'go'
 patrie (la), 'country,' 'fatherland'
 patriotisme (le), 'patriotism'
 patron (le), 'patron,' 'skipper'
 pavillon (le), 'flag,' 'summer-
 house'
 pays (le), 'country'
 paysan (le), 'peasant'
 pêche (la), 'fishing'
 peindre (irr. v., see *craindre*), 'to
 paint'
 peine (à), 'scarcely'
- peint, see *peindre*
 pendant (le), 'the fellow'
 en —, 'as a pendant'
 pendant, 'during'
 — *que*, 'whilst'
 pénible, 'painful'
 penser, 'to think'
 perdre, 'to lose'
 — *de vue*, 'to lose sight of'
 permanence (la), 'permanence'
 en —, 'permanently'
 permettre (irr. v., see *mettre*)
 'to allow'
 permit, see *mettre*
 personne (la), 'person,' 'indi-
 vidual'
 petit, 'little,' 'small'
 peu (adv.), 'little'
 — *à —*, 'by degrees'
 peuple (le), 'people'
 peur (la), 'fear'
 avoir —, 'to be afraid'
 peut, see *pouvoir*
 peut-être, 'perhaps'
 pic (le), 'pick'
 à —, 'perpendicular'
 pièce (la), 'piece,' 'gun,' 'room'
 mettre en —, 'to tear to pieces'
 pied (le), 'foot'
 piédestal (le), 'pedestal,' 'step-
 ping-stone'
 pierre (la), 'stone'
 piquer, 'to spit'
 place (la), 'place,' 'seat,' 'square'
 placer, 'to place'
 plaindre (irr. v., see *craindre*),
 'to pity'
 se —, 'to complain'
 plaine (la), 'plain'
 plainte, see *plaindre*
 plainte (la), 'complaint'
 plaisir (le), 'pleasure'
 plan (le), 'plan'
 planche (la), 'plank'

- plancher (le), 'floor'
 plante (la), 'plant'
 plaque (la), 'plate,' 'slab'
 plat (le), 'plate,' 'dish'
 plateau (le), 'tableland'
 plein, 'full'
 plénitude (la), 'fulness'
 plomb (le), 'lead'
 plonger, 'to plunge'
 pluie (la), 'rain'
 plume (la), 'pen'
 plus, 'more'
 de — en —, 'more and more'
 plusieurs, 'several'
 poindre (irr. v., see *croûdre*), 'to dawn,' 'spring up'
 point (le), 'point'
 pointe (la), 'point'
 la — du jour, 'daybreak'
 poitrine (la), 'chest,' 'bosom'
 politesse (la), 'politeness'
 politique, 'political'
 polonais, 'Polish'
 pompeusement, 'pompously'
 pont (le), 'deck,' 'bridge'
 populaire, 'popular'
 population (la), 'population'
 port (le), 'port,' 'harbour'
 porte (la), 'gate,' 'door'
 portée (la), 'reach'
 à —, 'within reach'
 porter, 'to bear,' 'carry'
 se —, 'to be'
 porteur (le), 'bearer'
 porte-voix (le), 'speaking-trumpet'
 portrait (le), 'portrait,' 'picture'
 poser, 'to place'
 positif, 'positive'
 position (la), 'position,' 'state of affairs'
 possession (la), 'possession'
 poudre (la), 'powder'
 pouls (le), 'pulse'
 tâter le —, 'to feel the pulse'
 pour, 'for,' 'in order to'
 poursuite (la), 'pursuit'
 poursuivre (irr. v., see *survre*), 'to pursue,' 'follow'
 pouvoir à (irr. v., see *voir*), 'to be able to'
 pourvu que, 'provided that'
 pousser, 'to push,' 'grow'
 poussière (la), 'dust'
 poutre (la), 'beam'
 pouvait, see *pouvoir*
 pouvoir (irr. v.), 'to be able,' 'can,' 'may'
 pouvoir (le), 'power'
 prairie (la), 'meadow'
 précéder, 'to precede'
 précieux, 'precious'
 précipice (le), 'precipice'
 précipiter, 'to precipitate'
 se —, 'to rush'
 précis, 'precise'
 précisément, 'exactly' 'precisely'
 précurseur (le), 'forerunner'
 préférence (la), 'choice'
 préfet (le), 'prefect'
 prélude, 'prelude,' 'foretaste'
 premier, 'first'
 prend, see *prendre*
 prendre (irr. v.), 'to take'
 à tâche, 'to make it a point to'
 se — à, 'to begin to'
 les devants, 'to lead the way'
 premez, see *prendre*
 préparatif (le), 'preparation'
 préparer, 'to prepare'
 près de, 'near'
 présage (le), 'omen'
 présence (la), 'presence'
 en —, 'into the presence'
 présenter, 'to introduce,' 'present'
 presque, 'almost'
 pressant, 'pressing'
 pressent, see *pressentir*
 pressentir (irr. v., see *sentir*), 'to have a presentiment,' 'anticipate'

presser, 'to press'	promet, see <i>promettre</i>
prêt, 'ready'	promis, see <i>promettre</i>
prêter, 'to lend'	prononcer, 'to pronounce,' 'speak,' 'utter'
prêtre (le), 'priest'	proposer, 'to propose'
preuve (la), 'proof'	propre, 'clean,' 'own'
prévenir (irr. v., see <i>venir</i>), 'to inform,' 'warn,' 'anticipate'	propriété (la), 'property'
prévision (la), 'anticipation'	proscrit (le), 'exile'
prière (la), 'prayer'	protection (la), 'protection'
prince (le), 'prince'	protégé (le), 'dependant'
princesse (la), 'princess'	protestation (la), 'protest'
principal, 'principal,' 'chief'	protester, 'to protest'
principe (le), 'principle'	province (la), 'province'
pris, see <i>prendre</i>	provisoirement, 'provisionally'
prise (la), 'taking,' 'capture'	prussien, 'Prussian'
prison (la), 'prison'	pu, see <i>pouvoir</i>
prisonnier (le), 'prisoner'	public, 'public'
prit, see <i>prendre</i>	publisher, 'to publish'
privation (la), 'deprivation'	puis, 'then'
priver, 'to deprive'	puisque, 'since'
probabilité (la), 'probability'	puissance (la), 'power,' 'might'
probablement, 'probably'	puissant, 'powerful'
procéder, 'to proceed'	puisse, see <i>pouvoir</i>
prochain, 'near'	pulsation (la), 'pulsation'
proclamation (la), 'proclama- tion'	punir, 'to punish'
proclamer, 'to proclaim'	pupitre (le), 'desk'
procurer, 'to procure'	purent, see <i>pouvoir</i>
produire (irr. v., see <i>conduire</i>), 'to produce'	purgatif (le), 'purge,' 'aperient'
produit (le), 'product'	pût, see <i>pouvoir</i>
proéminent, 'prominent'	quand, 'when'
profiter, 'to make use of,' 'take advantage of'	— même, 'even if'
profond, 'deep'	quant à, 'as for'
progrès (le), 'progress'	quantité (la), 'quantity'
projet (le), 'project'	quarante, 'forty'
prolongement (le), 'prolonga- tion'	quart (le), 'quarter'
en —, 'to prolong,' 'extend'	quartier général (le), 'head- quarters'
prolonger, 'to prolong'	quatrième, 'fourth'
promenade (la), 'walk,' 'ride'	que, (pron.) 'whom,' 'which,' 'that,' 'what,' 'when'
promesse (la), 'promise'	(conj. adv.) 'that,' 'as'
promettre (irr. v., see <i>mettre</i>), 'to promise'	'than,' etc.
	quel, 'what,' 'which'
	quelque, 'some,' 'however'

quelquefois, 'sometimes'
 question (la), 'question'
 qui, 'which,' 'who,' 'whom'
 quiconque, 'whoever'
 quitter, 'to leave'
 quol, 'what'
 quoique (+ subj.), 'although'

ra^ubattre (se), 'to turn off'
 'se — su, 'to fall back on'

raconter, 'to relate'

rade (la), 'roads'

en —, 'in the roads'

rage (la), 'rage,' 'fury'

raison (la), 'good sense,' 'satisfaction'

avoir —, 'to be right'

donner — a, 'to justify'

ralentir, 'to slack,' 'lessen'

ralliement (le), 'rallying'

rallier, 'to rally'

ramener, 'to bring back'

rang (le), 'rank'

ranger, 'to range'

rapide, 'swift,' 'quick'

rapidité (la), 'speed,' 'rapidity'

rappel (le), 'recall,' 'call'

rappeler, 'to recall'

rapport (le), 'report,' 'produce'

sous tous les —s, 'in all respects'

rapporter, 'to report'

rapprocher, 'to bring near'

se —, 'to draw near'

rare, 'rare'

rarement, 'seldom'

rassembler, 'to collect,' 'get together'

rasseoir (se) (irr. v., see *asseoir*),
 'to sit down again'

rassurer, 'to reassure'

se —, 'to take courage'

ravin (le), 'ravine'

rayon (le), 'ray,' 'radius'

recevoir, 'to receive'

réci^oproquement, 'mutually'

réclamation (la), 'claim'

réclamer, 'to claim'

recommander, 'to recommend'

'register' (*cf. letters*)

recommencer, 'to begin again'

reconduire (irr. v., see *conduire*),
 'to escort'

reconnaissance (la), 'reconnais-
 sance'

reconnaissant (irr. v., see *recon-
 naître*), 'to recognise'

reconnaître (irr. v., see *con-
 naître*), 'to recognise'

reconnurent, see *reconnaître*

reconquérir (irr. v., see *acquérir*),
 'to reconquer'

reconstruire (irr. v., see *con-
 duire*), 'to rebuild'

recouvrir (irr. v., see *courir*), 'to
 recover,' 'cover'

recruter, 'to recruit'

reculer, 'to withdraw'

redevenir (irr. v., see *venir*), 'to
 become again'

rédiger, 'to draw up'

redoublement (le), 'increase'

réformer, 'to reform,' 'form
 again'

refuge (le), 'refuge'

refus (le), 'refusal'

refuser, 'to refuse'

regagner, 'to regain'

regard (le), 'look,' 'glance'

regarder, 'to look at'

régence (la), 'regency'

régent (le), 'regent'

régiment (le), 'regiment'

région (la), 'region'

règne (le), 'reign'

régnér, 'to reign'

regret (le), 'regret'

u —, 'reluctantly'

régularité (la), 'regularity,' 'or-
 derliness'

- réimprimer, 'to reprint'
 rejeter, 'to throw . back'
 rejoindre (irr. v., see *croindre*),
 'to rejoin'
 relatif, 'relative'
 relativement, 'relatively,' 'in
 relation to'
 religion (la), 'religion'
 relire (irr. v., see *lire*), 'to read
 again'
 relisant, see *relire*
 remarquer, 'to notice'
 remède (le), 'remedy'
 remercier, 'to thank'
 remet, see *remettre*
 remettre (irr. v.), 'to put back,'
 'send back'
 rempart (le), 'rampart'
 remplacer, 'to replace'
 remplir, 'to fulfil'
 remuer, 'to stir'
 rencontre (la), 'meeting'
 à ma —, 'to meet me'
 rencontrer, 'to meet'
 rendez-vous (le), 'meeting-
 place'
 redormir(se) (irr. v., see *dormir*),
 'to go to sleep again'
 rendre, 'to give back,' 'restore,'
 'surrender'
 se —, 'to go'
 renfermer, 'to enclose'
 renforcer, 'to reinforce'
 renfort (le), 'reinforcement'
 renouveler, 'to renew'
 renseignement (le), 'informa-
 tion'
 rentrée (la), 'return'
 rentrer, 'to return'
 renverser, 'to overturn'
 renvoyer (irr. v., see *envoyer*),
 'to send back'
 répandre, 'to spread'
 réparaître (irr. v., see *connaître*),
 'to reappear'
- reparut, see *réparaître*
 repartir (irr. v., see *dormir*), 'to
 set out again'
 repasser, 'to return,' 'pass again'
 répéter, 'to repeat'
 remplacer, 'to replace'
 répondre, 'to answer'
 réponse (la), 'answer'
 reposer, 'to rest'
 repousser, 'to drive back'
 reprendre (irr. v., see *prendre*),
 'to resume'
 reprocher, 'to reproach'
 réserve (la), 'reserve'
 réserver, 'to reserve'
 résidence (la), 'dwelling,' 'resid-
 ence'
 résigner, 'to resign'
 résistance (la), 'resistance'
 résister à, 'to resist'
 résolution (la), 'resolution'
 respectueux, 'respectful'
 respiration (la), 'breathing'
 ressaisir, 'to seize again'
 ressort (le), 'spring'
 ressortir (irr. v., see *sortir*), 'to
 go out again'
 reste (le), 'remnant,' 'rest'
 au —, 'however'
 rester, 'to remain'
 résultat (le), 'result'
 retard (le), 'delay'
 retentir, 'to re-echo'
 retirer, 'to withdraw'
 se —, 'to withdraw'
 retour (le), 'return'
 retourner, 'to turn back or
 round,' 'return'
 retraite (la), 'retreat'
 en —, 'retired'
 retrouver, 'to find again,' 'find'
 réunir, 'to unite'
 rêve (le), 'dream'
 réveille-matin (le), 'alarm'
 réveiller, 'to arouse'

- revenir (irr. v., see *venir*), 'to re-
turn'
 revenu (le), 'income'
 rêver, 'to dream'
 revers (le), 'back,' 'reverse,'
 'check'
 revêtit, see *être*
 revoir (irr. v., see *voir*), 'to see
 again'
 révolution (la), 'revolution'
 revue (la), 'review'
passer en —, 'to review'
 riche, 'rich'
 rideau (le), 'curtain'
 rien, 'nothing'
— du tout, 'nothing at all'
 rire (irr. v.), 'to laugh'
 rit, see *rire*
 rivage (le), 'bank,' 'shore'
 rivière (la), 'river'
 rocher (le), 'rock'
 roi (le), 'king'
 rôle (le), 'part'
 rompre, 'to break'
 rouge, 'red'
 rouler, 'to roll'
 route (la), 'road'
en —, 'on the way'
 royal, 'royal'
 ruisseau (le), 'stream'
 sabord (le), 'porthole'
 sabre (le), 'sabre'
 sabrer, 'to cut,' 'slash'
 sacré, 'sacred'
 sacrement (le), 'sacrament'
 sacrifier, 'to sacrifice'
 sagacité (la), 'sagacity,' 'wisdom'
 saisir, 'to seize'
 sait, see *savoir*
 salle (la), 'room,' 'hall'
 saluer, 'to salute,' 'greet'
 salve (la), 'volley,' 'round'
 samedi (le), 'Saturday'
 sanctionner, 'to sanction'
 sang (le), 'blood'
 sans, 'without'
— que, 'without'
 santé (la), 'health'
 satin (le), 'satin'
 satisfaire (irr. v., see *faire*), 'to
 satisfy'
 sauf (adv.), 'except'
 saurait, see *savoir*
 sauver, 'to save'
 savoir (irr. v.), 'to know,' 'be
 able'
 sceller, 'to seal'
 sec (sèche), 'dry'
 secours (le), 'succour,' 'help,'
 'supplies'
 secret (le), 'secrecy'
 secret, 'secret'
 secrétaire (le), 'secretary'
 secrètement, 'secretly'
 seize, 'sixteen'
 séjour (le), 'stay'
 selon, 'according to'
 semaine (la), 'week'
 semblable à, 'like'
 sembler, 'to seem'
 semer, 'to sow,' 'scatter'
 sens (le), 'sense,' 'direction'
 sensible, 'sensitive,' 'visible'
 sentier (le), 'path'
 sentinelle (la), 'sentinel'
 sentir (irr. v., see *dormir*), 'to
 feel'
 séparer, 'to separate'
 sépulture (la), 'burial'
 sera, see *être*
 sérieusement, 'seriously'
 sérieux, 'serious'
 serment (le), 'oath'
 seront, see *être*
 serpent (le), 'serpent'
 serrer, 'to tighten,' 'press'
 service (le), 'service'
de —, 'on duty'
 serviette (la), 'napkin'

- servir** (irr. v., see *dormir*), 'to serve'
 — *de*, 'to serve as'
- seul**, 'single,' 'alone'
seulement, 'only'
sévir, 'to rage'
si, 'so,' 'if,' 'whether,' 'yes'
siècle (le), 'age'
signal (le), 'signal'
signaler, 'to signal,' 'notify'
signe (le), 'sign,' 'mark'
signifier, 'to signify,' 'notify'
silence (le), 'silence'
simple, 'simple,' 'mere'
sire, 'your majesty'
situation (la), 'situation,' 'position'
situé, 'situated'
six, 'six'
sœur (la), 'sister'
soie (la), 'silk'
soin (le), 'care'
soir (le), 'evening'
soirée (la), 'evening'
soit, 'either'
soixante, 'sixty'
sol (le), 'soil,' 'ground'
soldat (le), 'soldier'
soleil (le), 'sun'
solennellement, 'solemnly'
sollicitude (la), 'anxiety,' 'care'
son (possessive adj.), 'his,' 'her,' 'its'
songer, 'to think'
sonner, 'to sound,' 'ring'
sorte (la), 'sort,' 'kind'
sortie (la), 'leaving,' 'sortie'
sortir (irr. v., see *dormir*), 'to go out'
soudain, 'sudden'
souffert, see *souffrir*
souffrir (irr. v., see *courir*), 'to suffer'
souffrit, see *souffrir*
souhaiter, 'to wish'
- soulèvement** (le), 'rising,' 'revolt'
soulever, 'to rouse,' 'raise'
soumettre (irr. v., see *mettre*), 'to submit'
soumis, see *soumettre*
soupçon (le), 'suspicion'
soupçonner, 'to suspect'
soupir (le), 'sigh'
sourcil (le), 'eyebrow'
sourd, 'deaf,' 'dull'
sourire (irr. v., see *rire*), 'to smile'
sous, 'under,' 'beneath'
sous-lieutenant, 'subaltern'
soutenir (irr. v., see *tenir*), 'to support'
souvenir (le), 'recollection'
souvent, 'often'
souverain (le), 'sovereign'
souveraineté (la), 'sovereignty'
soyez, see *être*
spontanément, 'spontaneously'
station (la), 'station'
stationner, 'to stop,' 'stand about'
statue (la), 'statue'
succéder à, 'to succeed'
succès (le), 'success'
successif, 'successive'
succomber, 'to succumb'
sud-est (le), 'south-east'
suffisant, 'sufficient'
suffocation (la), 'suffocation'
suis, see *suivre* or *être*
surt, see *suivre*
suite (la), 'suite,' 'attendants'
suivant, 'following'
suivi, see *suivre*
suivre (irr. v.), 'to follow'
supérieur, 'superior'
supporter, 'to support'
suprême, 'final,' 'supreme'
sur, 'on,' 'upon'
 — *ces entrefaites*, 'in the meanwhile'
 — *le-champ*, 'on the spot'
sûr, 'certain,' 'sure'

sûreté (la), 'surety,' 'safety'
 surface (la), 'surface'
 surmonter, 'to surmount'
 surprendre (irr. v., see *prendre*),
 'to surprise'
 surtout, 'above all,' 'especially'
 surveillance (la), 'superintend-
 ence'
 survenir (irr. v., see *venir*), 'to
 come up,' 'happen'
 survivrent, see *survenir*
 suspendre, 'to suspend'
 suture (la), 'suture,' 'joining'
 symptôme (le), 'symptom'

table (la), 'table'
 tableau (le), 'picture'
 tache (la), 'spot,' 'stain'
 — *de roussour*, 'freckle'

tâcher, 'to try'
 taille (la), 'height,' 'waist'
 tailler, 'to cut'
 tailleur (le), 'tailor'
 tambour (le), 'drum,' 'drummer'
 tandis que, 'whilst'
 tant, 'so much,' 'so many'
 — *de*, 'so many'
 — *que*, 'as long as'

tantôt tantôt, 'at one
 time . at another'

tapis (le), 'carpet'

tard, 'late'

tarder, 'to delay'

— *à*, 'to be slow in'

tasse (la), 'cup'

tel, 'such'

tellement, 'so,' 'to such a de-
 gree'

temporaire, 'temporary'

temps (le), 'weather,' 'time'

de — à autre, 'from time to time'

de — en —, 'from time to time'

tendre, 'to hold out,' 'tender,'
 'stretch,' 'strain,' 'spread'

tendrement, 'tenderly'

tenir (irr. v.), 'to hold'

tentative (la), 'attempt'

tente (la), 'tent'

tenter, 'to try,' 'attempt'

tergiverser, 'to shuffle,' 'evade'

terminer, 'to finish,' 'conclude'

terrain (le), 'land,' 'ground'

terrasse (la), 'terrace'

terre (la), 'land,' 'earth'

terrible, 'terrible'

territoire (le), 'territory'

tertre (le), 'hillock'

testament (le), 'will'

tête (la), 'head'

tiers (le), 'third'

tirer, 'to draw,' 'fire'

toile (la), 'cloth,' 'linen,' 'canvas'

tombe (la), 'tomb'

tomber, 'to fall'

tonner, 'to thunder'

torrent (le), 'torrent'

Toscane (la), 'Tuscany'

toucher, 'to touch'

toujours, 'always,' 'still'

tour (le), 'turn,' 'trick'

— *à —*, 'in turn'

tourner, 'to turn'

tout, (adj. and pron.) 'all,' 'every-
 thing'

(adv.) 'quite'

— *a coup*, 'suddenly'

— *a fait*, 'entirely'

tracé (le), 'outline'

tracer, 'to trace'

tragédie (la), 'tragedy'

trahir, 'to betray'

trahison (la), 'treachery,' 'be-
 trayal'

traîner, 'to drag'

traité (le), 'treaty'

traiter, 'to treat,' 'deal'

traître (le), 'traitor'

tranquillement, 'quietly'

tranquillité (la), 'quietness'

transformer, 'to change,' 'trans-
 form'

- transmettre (irr. v., see *mettre*), 'to transmit'
 transmirent, see *transmettre*
 transport (le), 'transport'
 transporter, 'to carry,' 'transport'
 travail (le), 'work'
 travailler, 'to work'
 travers (à), 'through'
 traverse (la), 'cross-piece'
 chemin de —, 'cross road'
 traverser, 'to cross'
 trembler, 'to tremble'
 trente, 'thirty'
 très, 'very'
 tréteau (le), 'trestle'
 triangle (le), 'triangle'
 triomphal, 'triumphal'
 troisième, 'third'
 tromper, 'to deceive'
 se —, 'to be mistaken'
 tronçon (le), 'stump,' 'piece'
 trône (le), 'throne'
 trop, 'too,' 'too much,' 'too many'
 troupe (la), 'troop,' 'band'
 trouver, 'to find'
 se — 'to be'
 se — mal, 'to be uncomfortable'
 tuer, 'to kill'
 tumulte (le), 'commotion'
- usage (l'), *m.*, 'custom'
 user, 'to employ'
 utilité (l'), *f.*, 'utility'
- va*, see *aller*
 vague, 'vague'
 vain, 'vain'
 en —, 'in vain'
 vaincre (irr. v.), 'to conquer'
 vaincu, see *vaincre*
 vainqueur (le), 'conqueror'
 vaisseau (le), 'vessel'
 valet de chambre (le), 'valet'
 vapoureux, 'vaporous,' 'misty'
- vase (la), 'mud,' 'slime'
 vase (le), 'vessel,' 'vase'
 vécu, see *vivre*
 végétation (la), 'vegetation'
 veille (la), 'day before,' 'eve'
 velours (le), 'velvet'
 venait, see *venir*
 vendre, 'to sell'
 venger, 'to avenge'
 venir (irr. v.), 'to come'
 vent (le), 'wind'
 venu, see *venir*
 verbal, 'verbal'
 vérifier (se), 'to be verified'
 véritable, 'true'
 vermeil (le), 'silver-gilt'
 vers, 'towards' (*of time or place*)
 verser, 'to pour'
 vertu (la), 'virtue'
 vésicatoire (le), 'blister'
 vêtir (irr. v.), 'to clothe'
 vêtu, see *vêtir*
 veuille, see *vouloir*
 veulent, see *vouloir*
 veut, see *vouloir*
 vicissitude (la), 'vicissitude'
 victoire (la), 'victory'
 vide (le), 'void,' 'gap'
 vie (la), 'life'
 viendrait, see *venir*
 viens, see *venir*
 vieux (vienne), 'old'
 vif (vive), 'lively,' 'keen'
 vinaigre (le), 'vinegar'
 vingt-quatre, 'twenty-four'
 village (le), 'village'
 ville (la), 'town'
 diner en —, 'to dine out'
 vint, see *venir*
 violation (la), 'violation'
 violence (la), 'violence'
 violer, 'to violate'
 violet, 'violet'
 visage (le), 'face'
 vis-à-vis de, 'opposite,' 'in reference to'

visiter, 'to visit'	volontairement, 'voluntarily'
vit, see <i>voir</i>	volontiers, 'gladly'
vitrages (les), <i>m.</i> , 'glass'	volte-face, 'face about'
vivant, 'living'	<i>faire</i> —, 'to wheel round'
vivat (le), 'hurrah'	vont, see <i>aller</i>
vive! 'long live'	vos, see <i>votre</i>
vivement, 'sharply,' 'keenly'	votre, 'your'
vivre (<i>irr. v.</i>), 'to live'	voudra, see <i>voulour</i>
vœu (le), 'vow,' 'wish,' 'prayer'	voudraient, see <i>voulour</i>
voie (la), 'way,' 'track'	voulour (<i>irr. v.</i>), 'to wish'
voilà, 'see,' 'there is'	vouloir (le), 'will'
voile (la), 'sail'	voulu, see <i>voulour</i>
<i>faire</i> —, 'to sail'	voulut, see <i>voulour</i>
voilier (le), 'sailer'	voyage (le), 'voyage,' 'journey'
voir (<i>irr. v.</i>), 'to see'	voyant, see <i>voir</i>
voit, see <i>voir</i>	vrai, 'true'
voiture (la), 'carriage'	vu, see <i>voir</i>
voix (la), 'voice'	vue (la), 'sight'
voler, 'to fly'	
volontaire (le), 'volunteer'	yeux, <i>pl</i> of <i>œil</i> , <i>m.</i> , 'eyes'

APPENDICES

BY

THE GENERAL EDITORS

APPENDIX I.—WORDS AND PHRASES FOR *VIVA VOCE* DRILL

„ II.—SENTENCES ON SYNTAX AND IDIOMS FOR *VIVA
VOCE* PRACTICE

„ III.—PASSAGES FOR TRANSLATION INTO FRENCH

I. WORDS AND PHRASES

FOR *VIVA VOCE* DRILL

Note —This Appendix gives the primary and ordinary meanings of words, and therefore does not in every case supply the best word to be used in the translation of the text

Some words and phrases are intentionally inserted several times

It is suggested that the phrases should be said in different persons and tenses, to insure variety and practice

All nouns to be given with the definite or indefinite article to show the gender.

Abbreviation —sg. = 'something'

Page	WORDS	WORDS	PHRASES
1	an island	to moisten ,	four shillings a day
	the world	anchor	that is all I need
	to surround	the clergy	at six o'clock in the evening
	the corner		
2	the next day	the crew	to hoist a flag
	the volley	the key	towards two o'clock
	(<i>salute</i>)	the garrison	before entering the town
	the ground, soil		after answering the mayor
3	the choice	the sojourn,	to sacrifice one's rights
	the sovereign	stay	to consent to an arrangement
	the pledge	the remem-	to owe some one sg.
	the property	brance	
4	the fishing	the proof	to mount one's horse
	the marble	the revenue	the most urgent needs
	everywhere	the rock	to furnish a house tastefully
5	beyond.. (<i>prep</i>)	the heat	to live on the first floor
	the library	entirely	his eagle eye
	the workman	to accustom	I have no doubt he will come
		one's self to..	
6	to be warned	the treaty	the allied sovereigns
	the safety	to suspect	to get weary of sg.
	his brother-in-	the conspiracy	not to dare do sg.
	law	the centre	

Page	WORDS	WORDS	PHRASES
7	the principle ostentatiously to endeavour to . .	to use, employ the despair skilful, adroit	in case he should refuse to spread rumours to collect information
8	discontented incapacity, ignorance want of foresight	the preparations the supervision to deceive	they were turning their eyes in his direction on the one hand . . on the other . in less than a week in all directions
9	to slacken to order sg. an orange-tree	the project ammunition to recruit	to be busy with one's departure to make use of an opportunity
10	to go by (<i>of time</i>) the afternoon to wish	the journey to go to bed to get under sail	to set out again for Naples to ask permission to . . to take leave of some one
11	the sea to disappear the port the brig	a merchant vessel to try	to entrust some one with sg. in case of war to send support (<i>mil</i>)
12	to succeed, follow the destiny the departure	a tear to flow the roadstead to set sail	to make provision for sg. to beat to arms at the very moment when
13	a place of refuge the sun the cruise	to spread (<i>tr</i>) suddenly the coast	at daybreak to go on deck at the same time
14	a man-of-war everybody chance	foreign the crew the pursuit	to make up one's mind to carry sg. at the first onset within hail [<i>(mil)</i>]
15	Leghorn Genoa the speaking- trumpet the politeness	so that to round (a cape) the open sea	according to custom to exchange a few words to be wonderfully well
16	to make out, decipher the desk the drum	the cap in the midst of . . to anchor	to draw up a proclamation to make a fair copy of to set to work
17	a madman a reverse to forestall	to halt the complaint the footpath	to carry a place by main force on the rising of the moon covered with snow
18	in thousands doubtful to meet some one	to warn some one a carriage a steep moun- tain	to have to deal with some one to send some one to meet him to line the road

Page WORDS

WORDS

PHRASES

- | | | |
|-----------------------------------|------------------------|---|
| 19 to stop (<i>intr</i>) | to fire (<i>mil</i>) | ten paces from a brook |
| never mind | here I am | the bridle of his horse |
| a sword | the mouth | at the moment when . . |
| 20 a short cut | to run up | at the top of the mountain |
| to surround | the dust | to get ahead of some one |
| the rock | to be ready to . . | to pass by like lightning |
| 21 a drummer | to fly | to turn about (<i>mil</i>) |
| the stirrup | the flag | to approach some one |
| the sign | the breast | to start first, go ahead |
| 22 the century | the rampart | to be mad with joy |
| to baffle, frustrate | the key | what does it matter? |
| a hillock | the beam, joist | to break in the doors |
| 23 a feast | the congratulations | in an instant (<i>duration</i>) |
| to reprint | the crowd | to incur a danger |
| to stick up | the count, earl | to review the garrison |
| (<i>bull's</i>) | to flee | at the end of a quarter of an hour |
| 24 the patriots in | constantly | at five o'clock in the evening |
| a reconnoitring party | to be on the increase | to take possession of a town |
| to receive, welcome | the courtyard | to be ashamed of one's coldness |
| 25 an individual | to rush at . | to lose one's life |
| the suburb | the course | he might have entered |
| the oath | a dream | I owe everything to him |
| 26 to stifle | a drop | to prepare for war |
| the courtier | a way, path | to give some one time to do sth. |
| to bend (<i>intr</i>), bow down | (<i>fig</i>) | |
| 27 sometimes | Brussels | the return from the island of Elba |
| the peace | a circular | to dissolve the congress |
| Belgium | the result | to be astonished at this silence |
| 28 a kernel | the tailor | to work for sixteen hours a day |
| the gun, musket | an engineer officer | within twenty-four hours |
| a workshop | | disbanded soldiers |
| a foundry | to tame, keep under | to advance by forced marches |
| 29 the Bavarian | to take an oath | in less than two months (<i>duration</i>) |
| the Palatinate | | on the banks of the Rhine |
| the Black Forest | behind him | to open a campaign |
| Poland | the Scheldt | on his right (left) |
| 30 the part (<i>in acting</i>) | a space | to form the vanguard |
| a quarter | | |
| to leave for . . | | |

Page	WORDS	WORDS	PHRASES
31	to count, number as for . the horseshoe the shape	thus farthest away from . nearest -g.	in the neighbourhood of Namur to establish one's headquarters at X. a league and a half distant from our outposts
32	entirely to bend the spy	information separately completely	to arrive in the course of the evening of the 14th without having the least know- ledge of sg to attack someone unexpectedly at day break to take possession of the bridge at an early hour
33	to answer for the aim (<i>lumb</i>) to sit down again	the change to repulse the territory	
34	to overthrow a square to cut (<i>into</i> <i>sluces</i>)	a figure (<i>arith</i>) a void, empty space the hamlet	more than 2½ miles beyond the river to be late (<i>of persons</i>) to hasten to profit by sg.
35	the rear-guard consequently to bring back, take back	to fail a cannon-shot in the direction of . .	to start again on one's march to face (be opposite to) a town to make one's arrangements
36	to pass by (<i>of</i> <i>time</i>) the chance besides, more- over	to break through, force to cut the wing	to give the order for the attack to pay attention to sg. to open the fight
37	nevertheless a field-piece to be disabled	to consist of to rally to escape	that's what he can't understand to force the enemy to retreat to be thrown from one's horse
38	the astonish- ment to stretch out too late	to turn round (<i>int.</i>) the reinforce- ment to retreat	to hesitate to do sg. to count on some one to come to some one's aid
39	to prevent used to . . a mistake	to mount (a horse) to destroy an attack	in his turn to arrive in time to start at once
40	to pursue in sight of . to reconnoitre	the cuirassier the day before the rain	to utilise the configuration of the ground to take up one's position to confine one's range of view to reproach some one with sg. to order the artillery to . .
41	the highroad the slowness	the marsh, swamp	

Page	WORDS	WORDS	PHRASES
	the mud	to experience,	to unmask a battery
	the mist	labour under	
42	to make sure	the fair	in front of the forest
	of it	the plain	to seem to be inclined to do
	all together	to endeavour	sg.
	to be in need	to .	in all probability
	of . .		
43	to attract	similar to	well on in the forenoon
	not to know	the main road	to lose trace of the enemy
	to dispatch	to be ready	the crest of a knoll
		to .	
44	to take a rest	the remnants	on the eve of Zama
	to have a pre-	the mirth,	the sun appears through the
	sentiment	alacrity	clouds
	to annihilate	the fright	to attack with splendid dash
45	to fall back	the rout	to lose one's head
	the disaster	an obstinate	to press round the eagles
	to be alive	struggle	to make a passage for one's
	to drown		self
46	to attempt	to dismount	sword in hand
	the disorder	the cannon-ball	he is right
	the tumult	the bullet	to be back in Paris
47	to abdicate	the law	on board the Bellerophon
	the faction,	to cast anchor	to be exposed to .
	party	the roadstead	to set sail for England
	the hearth		
48	the right (<i>justice</i>)	to forfeit	to protest solemnly
	by force	the flag (<i>naval</i>)	in good faith
	the guest	henceforth	to lay an ambush
49	the trust	to get under	to pretend to do sg.
	in spite of	sail for	to be ashamed of sg.
	to take away	the departure	to carry out an order
	from . .	an inn	
50	a country-house	the prelude	as best they could
	a garret	gradually	to have lunch without table-
	a mattress	the plate (<i>silver</i>)	cloth or napkin
			after half an hour's conversation
51	to dress (<i>int.</i>)	the shelter	a sort of harbour
	canvas	to wake up	until dinner-time
	a tent	the gaoler	to go to bed early
52	the bath, tub	the carpet	to let some one know
	to succeed in	the floor	to avail one's self of sg.
	(+ <i>verb</i>)	a camp-bed	with the exception of Marshal
	a piece of furni-		B.
	ture		

Page	WORDS	WORDS	PHRASES
53	a chest of drawers the linen, under-clothing	a dressing-case the mantelpiece a looking-glass the plank	to try on a slipper a maible but t of the king precisely opposite him
54	a wardrobe sometimes to tire out, weary	the sentry the circle to go beyond	in spite of the heat of the day to make a point of doing sg. to take aim at some one
55	the change the health cardboard	the eyebrow unwholesome the spot, stain	to attain the age of fifty while this was going on on the sly
56	the remedy especially to complain of..	to pour a comet the liver	a consultation took place to make rapid progress the fire by which he was consumed
57	everybody to label to congratulate on . .	the voice to become animated the event	to make one's last will you are not mistaken I am better to-day
58	to talk the duty the priest the corpse	above all to betake one's self to	he has never ceased to love her to make a detailed report to hand some one sg.
59	to bequeath the fever the pulse	to add the conduct to share	to be delirious to regain possession of one's faculties to lose consciousness
60	the shame to pant the brain	the lip to become extinguished the chest (<i>person</i>)	to reach its highest point from time to time at half-past ten
61	the heart the refusal the scaffold	to consent to dig a waistcoat	the executors of the will he had only seen it once white silk stockings
62	to stretch out the cloak the mattress	a pillow the reign mahogany	on the morning of the 8th around him to cover sg. with violet velvet
63	the prayer	to seal	to fire five shots a minute

SENTENCES ON SYNTAX AND IDIOMS

FOR *VIVA VOCE* PRACTICE

NAPOLÉON A L'ÎLE D'ELBE

I (pp. 1-2)

1. Would you like to be a king if you could ?
2. We do not want to keep anything of all that.
3. Every man used to receive a crown a day.
4. I think we have all that is necessary for us.
5. It was on the 5th of May 1805, at eight in the morning, that the catastrophe happened.
6. That very evening they all went on board of their own accord.
7. At length I was admitted into the Emperor's presence.
8. Is not this flag that of the island of Elba ?
9. I do not see why you should not sing in your turn.
10. The moment I heard of it, it was already too late.
11. Before entering the town, we were received by the clergy.
12. Were not the troops under arms when you arrived ?
13. After answering the mayor he went to the cathedral, where a Te Deum was sung.
14. Cannot this table serve you as a bed ?

II (pp. 3-5)

1. Such was the man given us of his own choice as our sovereign.
2. Is that all you have reserved for yourself ?
3. We hastened to let them know our new arrangement

4. Wherever I may be, I shall never forget you
5. Five hundred grenadiers had arrived on the 21st of June
6. Let us mount our horses and visit the whole of the island.
7. I wanted to ascertain for myself the state in which our friends
were
8. Nothing could escape the master's eyes.
9. It was only a cottage, which he had built at the foot of the
mountain
10. We questioned the workmen, nearly all of whom we knew
11. Never did he leave any one without having satisfied him
12. Although we are neighbours, I have not yet seen them.
13. No one doubted that he would in time get accustomed to his
new life.

III (pp 6-8)

1. I had only been listening for a few minutes when I heard a
great noise.
2. The boat had just gone when we arrived.
3. It was a conspiracy, the ramifications of which spread over
the whole of France
4. You look as if you did not believe what I have told you.
5. In the event of his refusing to do it, they were to use violence.
6. I want a man on whom I can rely
7. Were you not to be made acquainted with all that happened ?
8. It was impossible for the Bourbons to continue the struggle
9. The hatred which the want of foresight of the government had
provoked was almost universal
10. In less than a week everything was decided in his mind
11. Can you tell me what the question is about ?
12. Come and see us from time to time.
13. Colonel Campbell was the man under whose supervision every-
thing had been placed.

IV (pp 9-12)

1. There were roads in every direction, across and round the
island.
2. Why don't you get your little house finished ?
3. We had not yet begun our preparations for departure
4. You may be sure that I shall avail myself of the first
opportunity.

5. Let us wait until a week has elapsed
6. I must take leave of him before I go
7. Scarcely had the marshal gone out when the colonel entered.
8. If you go to bed at three in the morning, how will you be able to get up at daybreak?
9. The English fugate was engaged in getting under sail.
10. Do not go away and do not take your eyes off him.
11. The general entrusted the inhabitants with the defence of the city.
12. Who succeeded Louis XVI. on the throne?
13. At these words they threw themselves into each other's arms.
14. The soldiers fell on their knees before their chief.
15. A cannon-shot was suddenly heard: it was the signal for setting sail.

V (pp. 13-16)

1. What was our astonishment when we knew that we had only walked six leagues at the very most!
2. You would never guess what we saw when the sun had risen
3. The situation was so critical that we began to regret our decision
4. At about eleven o'clock, as we were off Leghorn, the wind at last freshened
5. Is not the sea only a few miles from here?
6. Why had not all the troops started at the same time?
7. Under such circumstances it was not easy to make up one's mind at once.
8. We tried to escape from them under cover of night
9. It was not long before the truth was known
10. At the soldiers were ordered to go below deck.
11. The ship was not quite within hail.
12. Although it was already growing dusk, I easily recognised them.
13. Whilst walking, we exchanged a few words.
14. I could not resist the wish to join in the conversation.
15. We had been forewarned, so that their delay did not cause us any anxiety.
16. No one had been able to read his letter,—not even he.
17. All who could write were turned into secretaries.
18. If I were you, I should set to work immediately,

LES CENT-JOURS

VI (pp 16-18)

- 1 There is the tree at the foot of which we sit.
2. The little army entered the town, shouting, "Long live the Emperor!"
3. Did not the officer cause the bridge to be burnt?
4. The town had already been taken by main force.
5. After listening to their complaints, he promised to render them justice.
6. I little thought I should find you in the middle of this wood.
7. It was necessary for him to make up his mind to leave the guns he had brought with him.
8. The mountain-paths were still covered with snow.
9. I have walked more than ten miles this morning.
10. The very next day these proclamations were distributed in thousands.
11. I should not like to have to deal with that man.
12. Do you know what regiment has been sent to meet them?
13. I wish you to do nothing without me.
14. We were approaching the town when we heard the news.
15. The soldiers advanced without a single cry or acclamation being heard.
16. To the left rose a precipitous mountain.
17. The meadow was scarcely twenty yards wide.

VII (pp 19-21)

1. Turning to his neighbour: "I have been deceived," he said, "but never mind."
- 2 I alighted and walked straight to the battalion, which was still motionless.
3. The aide-de-camp drew his sword and ordered his men to fire.
4. If there is one of you who wishes to do it, he can.
5. My voice was drowned in the midst of their clamour.
6. The lancers fell at his feet and kissed his hands.
7. His emotion was so great that tears came to his eyes.
8. Preceded by his staff and followed by his grenadiers, he at length reached the top of the mountain.

9. Thanks to his horse he arrived half an hour before us.
10. Men, women, children, every one rushed to meet him.
11. The whole town surrounded us before we were at the foot of the ramparts.
12. The colonel rose in order that everybody might see him.
13. He who told you so made a mistake.
14. Has our flag ever ceased to be yours ?
15. Let those who love me follow me !
16. Those shouts were heard by the others, who at once answered them.
17. As soon as he perceived us, he sprang from his horse

VIII (pp. 22-24)

1. If my attempt costs me my life, what does it matter ?
2. Our march had been so rapid that no one expected us.
3. It is not for me, but for you to decide.
4. More than six thousand men came out at the same time.
5. The soldiers rushed upon him as if they were going to tear him to pieces.
6. Never in any battle had I been exposed to so much danger.
7. That night we spent in talking and singing.
8. Was not the garrison ten thousand strong ?
9. The enthusiasm still went on increasing.
10. The little band was following him at a distance of about a quarter of a league
11. I arrived at the moment when I was least expected.
12. It was an accident, the cause of which nobody knew.
13. A few minutes after they were in one another's arms.
14. Was not General Macdonald compelled to retire ?
15. During the few days we stayed there, we saw them at least five times.

IX (pp. 25-27)

1. These few words had opened his eyes.
2. In one of those rooms the Emperor had nearly lost his life.
3. Could you not have come if you had wished ?
4. It was only half-past eight when we started.
5. One would have thought the Bourbons had never existed.
6. Everything was done so quickly that I thought I had been dreaming.

- 7 No one has anything to reproach you with.
- 8 Let us do everything for peace, whilst preparing for war.
- 9 Either of the two courses had its drawbacks
- 10 The enemy had as many armies as we had regiments.
- 11 Not to say anything was to consent.
- 12 It was enough, it is true, to show what their intention was.
- 13 This circular might have had some effect if the congress had been dissolved
- 14 I did not get any answer and was not surprised at it

X (pp. 28-30)

- 1 Swords, powder, guns, everything seemed to have disappeared.
- 2 How can you work sixteen hours a day ?
- 3 At his call France was suddenly covered with workshops and foundries.
- 4 How many battalions are there in a regiment of the line ?
- 5 In less than three weeks the whole country had been devastated
- 6 Besides those seven hundred thousand men, two hundred thousand more were nearly ready
- 7 We felt the heat more and more the farther we advanced.
- 8 "Put your crown aside," he said, "and take your sword again"
- 9 Would not the inhabitants have complained ?
- 10 Perhaps they will be deceived by it, but I do not think so.
- 11 It was with reluctance that he was playing this political comedy
- 12 If we wait a month, we shall have the whole of Europe on our hands.
- 13 The Prussians, who composed the vanguard, were divided into four corps.

XI (pp. 31-33)

1. The English army formed a horse-shoe, the two extremities of which were only two or three leagues from our outposts.
2. The second corps was commanded by Lord Uxbridge, whose headquarters were at Brussels.
3. Instead of his going, I will go myself.
4. We were advancing without the enemy having the slightest knowledge of our march.

5. The allies have extended their lines so much that they would require three days to effect a junction.
6. We can beat them only by attacking them unexpectedly.
7. The general was studying a large map when an aide-de-camp arrived at a gallop.
8. It was said that three colonels had gone over to the enemy.
9. I thought him so sincere that I would have answered for him without hesitation.
10. The king got up and laid his hand upon her arm.
11. The two columns were to begin to move at daybreak.
12. Our vanguard had early taken possession of the bridge.
13. Everything was done as the marshal had ordered

XII (pp 34-36)

1. The enemy were encamped more than a league beyond the river.
2. I cannot understand why they are so late
3. Was not nearly the whole regiment cut to pieces?
4. The unfortunate man was soon punished for his indecision.
5. Seeing the mistake they had made, he hastened to profit by it.
6. The division halted at the hamlet, an important point situated where four roads met.
7. We set out again on the 17th of June in the morning.
8. The army, drawn up in order of battle, was facing the river.
9. Our left was in line with Blücher's.
10. If you do not believe it, why do you not make him repeat it?
11. The five regiments were to fall upon the rear of the Prussians.
12. If one fails, the other won't
13. The first shot you hear will be the signal for the frontal attack
14. The day is too precious for us to lose it.
15. I hope you will be here when they arrive
16. The battle lasted two hours without any result being obtained
17. I am sure they must have been warned already.

XIII (pp 37-39)

1. That is just what we cannot make out.
2. General d'Erlon had taken the road to Saint-Amand instead of that to Bry.

3. Such a thing ought to be impossible.
4. Forty pieces of ordnance had fallen into our hands
5. The colonel himself had been thrown from his horse and had only escaped with difficulty
6. Instead of starting at half-past seven, they had not left the town before twelve.
7. Thinking he was followed by twenty thousand men, he had not hesitated to attack the enemy.
8. Those on whom we reckoned had not come to our aid.
9. Soon after the fight began again with renewed fury.
10. In spite of their gallantry they were obliged to retreat.
11. You will expose yourself without any advantage either to yourself or to us.
12. If the victory was less decisive than it might have been, it was none the less a victory
13. Run until you catch them.
14. Let us not in our turn make the same mistake as they have.
15. However clever they may be, their attempt cannot succeed.
16. We all thought we should arrive in time.
17. Just as he was going to mount his horse, he was told that the French were masters of the town
18. At about six in the morning we heard that our allies had been defeated

XIV (pp. 40-42)

1. It was our corps which first arrived in sight of the farm.
2. The cuirassiers were on the right, the light cavalry on the left, and the infantry in the centre
3. Fearing he might lose them, as on the day before, he would not begin anything without them.
4. After an hour's cannonade, rain, which was falling in torrents, put an end to the fighting.
5. I have never seen them, neither here nor anywhere else.
6. What can you reproach me with ?
7. The marshal went out hastily without listening to his excuses.
8. The poor men were in mud up to their knees.
9. Do not cease firing, were it only to show where you are
10. If you wish to ascertain it, nothing is easier.
11. There was no longer any doubt : the whole army was there.
12. Is not that what you wanted to know ?
13. We had taken with us all we wanted for the morrow

14. The Emperor ordered an observatory to be erected from the top of which he could view the whole plain
15. It was on that spot that the battle was fought
16. The third division was to serve him as a vanguard.

XV (pp. 43-45)

1. Scarcely was the dispatch sent when a messenger arrived.
2. Have you got another book like those you have already lent me?
3. We are ready to go wherever the cannon tell us that we are wanted.
4. It is hard to say which of the two will be victorious
5. It was after eleven when the sun appeared through the clouds.
6. Why do you not take away that sword from this child?
7. If the other division had then been available, the victory would have been ours
8. What are you going to do with what remains of it?
9. Who could withstand such heroes?
10. What reward have you been promised?
11. The soldiers lost their heads and no longer listened to their chiefs
12. The country in the middle of which they stood was arid and barren.
13. After that regiment had been put to flight, the rout was complete
14. We vainly tried to cut our way through the throng.
15. The victory cost the enemy twenty thousand men, two-thirds of whom were English

XVI (pp. 46-49)

1. The two staff-officers rushed forward, sword in hand
2. The grenadiers were quite willing to die, but they did not wish their Emperor to die with them.
3. It was nearly ten o'clock before we were back
4. Neither bullets nor cannon-balls could reach us.
5. Whoever tries to do it will certainly fail.
6. After looking at the letter, he gave it to me.
7. It was on the 19th of July that the ship set sail for Italy
8. In the face of heaven I solemnly protest against the violence which is done me.

9. If I came here, it was at the very instigation of the captain.
10. Had not the Emperor placed himself under the protection of English law ?
11. Answer me frankly · I appeal to your honour.
12. What greater proof can I give you of our esteem ?
13. Why have you not yet answered their invitation ?
14. As soon as he had said it, he repented of his promise.
15. The admiral was ashamed of the order he had received, and would not carry it out.
16. The prisoner arrived on the 10th of August, one hundred and five days after leaving France.

NAPOLÉON A SAINTE-HÉLÈNE

XVII (pp 50-52)

1. The captain's house was the largest in the island.
2. We were to stay in that temporary lodging so long as they could not receive us.
3. The soldiers barricaded the windows as best they could.
4. Both went into the attic and lay down each on a mattress.
5. The Emperor had to dine without either tablecloth or napkin.
6. Send for him at once, I want to speak to him.
7. After half an hour's conversation they went out together.
8. Let us go down, that they may do our room
9. There was a garden at the end of which a sort of arbour had been erected.
10. When I go to bed early, I wake up in the middle of the night and cannot go to sleep again.
11. Thinking a ride would do him good, I arranged one for the morrow.
12. We had been ordered never to lose sight of them.
13. It is not a pleasant thing to stay at home all day long.
14. The admiral had let him know that his new abode was ready.
15. How did you manage to get it done ?
16. The little colony lodged at Hut's Gate, a wretched little house on the road to the town.
17. The apartments consisted of two rooms, each sixteen feet long by thirteen wide.
18. In a corner was the little camp-bed in which the marshal used to sleep.

XVIII (pp. 53-56)

1. To the right was the portrait of the King of Rome, astride on a dog.
2. Why don't you put the sofa opposite the door?
3. This watch, a sort of alarum, was the one which I had been promised
4. The travellers had gone to France, Russia, and Spain in turn
5. You ~~seem~~ to make it a point to contradict me
6. It had been decided that when he went riding an officer should always accompany him
7. That matters little to me, provided you come
8. The sentry aimed at him, but the general snatched his gun from him just as he was going to fire.
9. It is incredible that they have not broken their necks.
10. The air, we all knew, was most unhealthy.
11. It is seldom you meet in the island any one who has reached the age of fifty.
12. The stranger, during our conversation, was looking at her stealthily.
13. About five in the afternoon the patient complained of cramp.
14. Soon the symptoms became more and more serious.
15. In spite of it all the disease continued to make rapid progress
16. Did you not tell me that you had seen a comet?
17. It is not there, it is in the liver that the trouble is.

XIX (pp. 57-59)

1. Everybody had been forbidden to go into his room.
2. Is it for me that you intend this dressing-case?
3. Allow me to congratulate you upon your success
4. "You are not mistaken," he said, "I am better to-day, but none the less I feel that my end is approaching"
5. When I am dead, each of you will return to Europe.
6. Raise your voice, no one can hear you
7. Do not write to me unless I write to you first.
8. I do not want you to send for the doctor
9. Go to my mother and tell her all you have seen.
10. It was the sharpest pain I had ever felt.
11. What shall we do, in case you should happen to faint?

- 12 Do not let any one approach me.
- 13 I am sure you will do nothing that may offend them.
- 14 There is not a single street that I do not know.

XX (pp 60-63)

1. In judging a man, we must take his intentions into account.
2. There was nothing but shame and confusion everywhere
- 3 I think the malady has reached its height
- 4 The last words that were heard were those of *tete and amée*.
- 5 The doctor himself thought that the life-principle was extinct.
6. The governor would not allow the body to leave the island.
- 7 Why will you not consent to my doing it?
- 8 Was not your friend in the habit of wearing black silk stockings?
- 9 It was a quarter to six at least when the ceremony took place.
10. The Emperor had his hands free, and his sword was by his side.
11. The hat, for want of room, had been placed at his feet.
- 12 The coffin was exposed in the same place where the body had been
- 13 At half-past twelve the procession set out on its way
14. The grave had been dug about a quarter of a mile from the town
- 15 You must not fire more than five shots a minute
- 16 Four soldiers lowered him into his tomb, with his feet turned to the east.
17. Sir Hudson Lowe declared, in the name of his government, that he could not allow any other inscription than that one.

III. PASSAGES FOR TRANSLATION INTO FRENCH

I

ON the 4th of May 1814 Napoleon landed on the island of Elba accompanied by all his suite. Before he entered Porto-Ferraio, the keys of the town were presented to him on a silver dish by the mayor. There was a large crowd of people waiting for him, for the population had hastened from every corner of the island to welcome him. On the same day General Dalesme published a proclamation, in which he informed the inhabitants that Napoleon had chosen the island for his residence, and that he would take the greatest interest in their happiness and prosperity. When the new garrison arrived towards the end of the month the general left the island, which was then handed over to its sovereign. After visiting every village, Napoleon returned to Porto-Ferraio and began to organise his court. His town-palace, as he called it, was situated on a hill which commanded a view of the harbour and the town. The Emperor led a very active life. He would come down to the library at daybreak and work till eight or nine. After luncheon he would go out on horseback to inspect the progress of agriculture and of the public works.

II

Napoleon had been living a few months in his little empire when the suspicions of the European powers were aroused by the seizure of some letters, which seemed to indicate that the island was the centre of a conspiracy. As soon as he was aware of this, he hastened to send secret agents to France and to Vienna to find out whether his friends were still devoted to him. These emissaries reported that the nation was dissatisfied with the rule of the Bourbons and was eagerly awaiting his return. In less than a week the Emperor had made up his mind. To deceive his enemies, he busied himself with making new roads, finishing his house, and ordering statues and vases in Italy, as if he were going to live in Elba all his life. Meanwhile he was secretly putting arms and ammunition on board the brig *Inconstant*. In February 1815 everything was ready. Luckily for the Emperor, the English frigate charged with watching his movements had just started for Leghorn. He followed its course with a telescope, and as soon as it had disappeared he seized all the merchantmen in the port and chose from among them the best sailers. The next morning he took leave of his mother and sister, and, summoning his old comrades, told them the object of the expedition. The enthusiasm of the soldiers was so great that they broke their ranks and flung themselves at his feet. He embarked at eight o'clock, and the little fleet left the harbour and sailed for France.

III

The next day, at sunrise, they were greatly alarmed to see two French frigates off the coast of Corsica, but, the

wind freshening, the Emperor decided to continue his course. About four o'clock in the afternoon the *Inconstant* was off Leghorn, but the frigates were still in sight, and towards nightfall a French brig appeared. The first idea of every one was that all three boats were hostile. In case of attack Napoleon ordered his soldiers to go below and prepare to board. But there was nothing to fear; the two brigs merely saluted one another and continued their voyage after exchanging a few words. The Emperor then drew up two proclamations, and dictated them to all who could write. On the 1st of March he landed near Antibes and established a bivouac in a wood. Hoping to win over the garrison, he sent twenty-five soldiers into the town, but the commanding officer, not knowing that the Emperor had escaped from Elba, raised the drawbridge and made them prisoners. During the first days of March Napoleon advanced through Cannes, Grasse, and many villages in the south of France. He had had his proclamations printed and scattered them in thousands wherever he went.

IV

Meeting a battalion, which had been sent from Grenoble to stop him, he felt that the critical moment had come. He dismounted and advanced alone towards the battalion. But few words sufficed to win over the soldiers. Scarcely had the Emperor spoken when they broke their ranks, ran forward and kissed his hands. But there was no time to be lost, so putting himself at the head of the column he drew near the town of Vizille. During the afternoon news was brought that the 7th regiment of infantry had started from Grenoble to bar the Emperor's road, but that half a league from the town its colonel had raised himself on his stirrups and told his men that, instead of stopping Napoleon, he was going to join him, and that

he had at once been followed by the whole regiment. In the evening the Emperor arrived under the walls of Grenoble. The commander of the garrison refusing to open the gates, the Emperor had them burst open with battering-rams. He and his staff spent the night in having his proclamations reprinted, and the next day, after receiving the congratulations of the civil and military authorities, he started for Lyons. Although he heard that the Duke of Orleans and Marshal Macdonald intended to defend that city, he nevertheless continued to advance. He counted on the patriotism of the people of Lyons, and he was not deceived, for the whole garrison came out to meet him, and at eight in the evening he entered the town in triumph.

V

After spending four days at Lyons, Napoleon passed successively through Macon, Auxerre, and Fontainebleau. It was at Auxerre that he received Marshal Ney with open arms, calling him "the bravest of the brave." On the evening of the 20th of March he arrived at Paris and entered the Tuileries, where he told the crowd of courtiers and generals, assembled there to welcome him, that he owed everything to the army. He then began to examine his position. What was he going to do? Make every effort for peace, or begin war at once? He ended by deciding in favour of peace, while at the same time he quietly prepared for war. This was a more difficult task than he expected, for all military material, guns, powder, cannons, seemed to have disappeared. But thanks to the Emperor's energy, the workshops and foundries did marvels. In a very short time six armies were equipped, and a seventh, called the army of reserve, assembled at Paris and Lyons to fortify those towns. Meanwhile the allied powers had sent four immense armies against France. Thousands of men

from Russia, Austria, Poland, Bavaria, Belgium, Prussia, and England were hastening by forced marches towards the banks of the Rhine. Having reviewed his troops on the Champ de Mars and sworn an oath of fidelity to the constitution, Napoleon opened the campaign. He left Paris on the 12th of June and established his headquarters at Beaumont, with the Sambre before him and the Meuse on his right.

VI

The Prussian army of 120,000 men, commanded by Blücher, extended in the form of a horse-shoe from Charleroi to Dinant, while the Anglo-Dutch army of 104,000 men lay in the same formation between Brussels and Ghent. On the 14th Napoleon was within five miles of the enemy. He spent the night in receiving information through spies of the position of the two armies, and in laying his plans for battle. At daybreak he moved his columns forward. Jérôme Bonaparte drove back the Prussian advance-guard under Ziethen and took five hundred prisoners, while General Gérard seized the bridge of Châtelet and pushed back the enemy beyond the river. The Emperor then commanded Ney to go with 40,000 men to the hamlet of Quatre-Bras and hold the English in check there, while he beat the Prussians. On the 16th he advanced again and found the Prussians between Saint-Amand and Sombref. Before attacking them he sent a messenger to Ney to tell him to retire to Bry and fall on the rear of the Prussians. Tired of waiting till Ney executed this movement, he attacked Blücher on the left at four in the afternoon. The battle had lasted two hours without his seeing any sign of Ney. There must have been some mistake, for at that moment a hostile column threatened his left wing. What had happened?

VII

Learning that this column was really d'Erlon's corps, the Emperor carried Ligny and put the enemy to flight. During the night he heard from Ney. The latter had started so late for Quatre-Bras that when he arrived there he found a much larger number of the enemy than he expected. He had begun the attack when he received the message from Napoleon, and had been obliged to continue the fight instead of carrying out his orders. Although Ney beat a retreat on Frasne, the victory was won by the French. On the 15th Lord Wellington learnt by courier that the French had taken Charleroi and were marching on Brussels. He immediately set out with all his troops for Quatre-Bras, where he received news of the Prussian defeat. At this time the French forces were divided into two columns, of which one, commanded by Napoleon, was watching the English, and the other under Grouchy was pursuing the Prussians. At length the hostile armies met at Quatre-Bras. Napoleon waited impatiently till Ney's and d'Erlon's corps arrived and then took the head of the column. It had rained so heavily that the soldiers were marching with the mud up to their knees. But the Anglo-Dutch army was exposed to the same inconvenience. Before establishing his headquarters the Emperor sent word to Grouchy to hold himself ready for battle on the day following.

VIII

This is the position of the four armies the day before the battle: Napoleon was near Planchenoit with 70,000 men, Wellington at Waterloo with 80,000, Blücher at Wavre with more than 74,000, while Grouchy was at Gembloux. On the 18th Ney began by seizing La Haie-Sainte, and then attacked Mont Saint-Jean. As the English bravely resisted this attack, the Emperor sent the old guard to Ney's help.

At the critical moment the noise of cannon was heard on the right, and the French at once thought it was Grouchy. When they saw that instead of Grouchy it was Blücher and Bülow, they thought themselves betrayed, lost their heads, and fled in wild confusion. Napoleon did his best to stop the rout, but in vain. His staff-officers took him and hurried him away in the direction of Paris, where he arrived on the 21st. On the 16th of July he sailed in the *Bellerophon* to England, with a view to putting himself under the protection of its laws. When he arrived at Plymouth the rumour was already being spread that the Government proposed to send him to St. Helena. The Emperor refused to believe it, and wrote a letter in which he solemnly declared that England had no right to dispose of his person and his liberty. He was her guest, not her prisoner.

IX

In spite of this letter Napoleon was compelled to start for St. Helena on August 7, 1815. He arrived there about the middle of October. At first he occupied a country-house belonging to a Mr. Balcombe, a house in which all the necessaries of life seemed to be wanting. The Emperor would spend the morning in dictating to his secretary; in the afternoon he would take a turn round the garden, and in the evening he and his friends used to read a play from Racine or Molière. At the beginning of December the English admiral informed him that a new house at Longwood was ready for him, so Napoleon set out there without delay. Here he was a little more comfortable. His bedroom contained a camp-bed, a sofa, a small table, and a quantity of books. On the mantelpiece were portraits of the King of Rome and of Marie-Louise, and the big silver watch which he had taken at Potsdam. His life here would have been tolerable in spite of the intense heat if he had not been treated as a prisoner. An officer followed him wherever he went, and when one day the Emperor had wandered farther than usual he was turned back by a

sentinel who levelled his gun at him. After this incident he decided not to go out again. His health continued fairly good until the beginning of 1821. In the month of March in that year he was seized with a fever, accompanied by cramp. His condition became more and more serious, and the surgeon, Mr. Arnott, feared he would die

X

After he had made his will the Emperor's health improved, and every one congratulated him on the change. But Napoleon was not deceived, for he felt that his end was approaching "You," he said, "will return to Europe and see your friends again, while I shall meet my brave generals in heaven." He then gave orders to the doctor to open his body after death, to take his heart and send it in spirits-of-wine to his dear wife, Marie-Louise. In May the fever increased and Napoleon became delirious. His pulse gave nearly a hundred beats a minute. On the 5th his breathing became more and more difficult, and the only words which could be heard were *head* and *army*. He died a few minutes after eleven. The doctor proceeded to carry out the Emperor's wishes, but the governor refused to allow his body or any part of it to be taken away from the island. The corpse, dressed in the uniform of the Chasseurs de la Garde, was exposed for two days, and was then enclosed in a shell of mahogany. At midday the soldiers of the garrison carried the coffin to the cemetery, and when they arrived at the grave's side five cannon-shots were heard from the fort. These were repeated every minute. At the head of the grave was placed a stone, on which was engraved the simple words: General Buonaparte.

SIEPMANN'S FRENCH SERIES.

Edited by OTTO SIEPMANN, Head of the Modern Language Department at Clifton College, and EUGÈNE PELLISSIER, Professeur Agrégé au Lycée du Havre, formerly Assistant Master at Clifton College, and Lecturer in French at the University College, Bristol.

NOTE—Those marked * are ready; those marked † are in the Press; and the others are in preparation.

ELEMENTARY.

- † BIART.—Monsieur Pinson. Edited by OTTO SIEPMANN, Clifton College
- * PIERRE CŒUR.—L'Âme de Beethoven. Edited by DE V. PAVEN-PAYNE, Kensington Coaching College 2s.
- * DAUDET.—La Tour des Maures. Edited by A. H. WALL, Marlborough College. 2s.
- † DESNOYERS.—Jean-Paul Choppart. Edited by L. VON GLEHN, Meichant Taylor's School
- DUMAS.—Napoléon. Edited by W. W. VAUGHAN, Clifton College
- † GENNEVRAÏ.—Marchand d'Allumettes. Edited by Miss ALICE A. JAMES, Queen's College, Barbados
- * LAMY.—Voyage du Novice Jean-Paul. Edited by D. DEVAUX, St. Paul's School 2s.
- * LAURIE.—Une Année de Collège à Paris. Edited by F. WARE, Examiner to the Civil Service Commissioners, late of Bradford Grammar School, and C. S. H. EREKTON 2s.
- * NORMAND.—L'Émeraude des Incas. Edited by F. ASTON BINNS, Sherborne School. 2s.
- * PATRICE.—Au Pôle en Ballon. Edited by P. S. JEFFREY, Royal Grammar School, Colchester 2s.
- SOUVESTRE.—Le Chasseur de Chamois. Edited by F. VOGELSANG, Seafield Technical College.
- JULES VERNE.—Le Tour du Monde en quatre-vingts jours. Edited by L. BARBÉ, Glasgow Academy 2s.

Others to follow

ADVANCED.

- * ABOUT.—Le Roi des Montagnes. Edited by Prof. WEEKLEY, University College, Nottingham. 2s. 6d.
- * de BERNARD.—L'Anneau d'Argent. Edited by LOUIS SERS, Wellington College. 2s. 6d.
- * COPPÉE.—Contes Choisis. Edited by Miss M. F. SKEAT, Royal Holloway College, Egham 2s. 6d.
- * DAUDET.—Tartarin de Tarascon. Edited by OTTO SIEPMANN, Clifton College. 2s. 6d.
- HUGO.—Ruy Blas. Edited by Prof. C. BÉVENOT, Birmingham University.
- * de LA BRÈTE.—Mon Oncle et mon Curé. Edited by E. C. GOLDBERG, Tonbridge School 2s. 6d.
- * MICHAUD.—La Première Croisade. Edited by A. V. HOUGHTON, Inspector to the Ministry of Public Instruction, Cairo. 2s. 6d.
- * POUVILLON.—Petites Âmes. Edited by S. BARLET, Meicars' School, London. 2s. 6d.
- * SANDEAU.—Sacs et Parchemins. Edited by E. PELLISSIER, Lycée Le Havre 3s. 6d.
- * THEURIET.—L'Abbé Daniel. Edited by PAUL DESAGES, Cheltenham College. 2s. 6d.
- * de VIGNY.—Cinq Mars. Edited by G. G. LOAN, St. Paul's School. 2s. 6d.
- * de VOGÜÉ.—Cœurs Russes. Edited by E. PELLISSIER, Lycée Le Havre 2s. 6d.

Others to follow.

Word- and Phrasebooks, with French translation, for Home-work 6d. each.

MACMILLAN AND CO., LTD., LONDON.

SIEPMANN'S GERMAN SERIES.

Edited by OTTO SIEPMANN, Head of the Modern Language Department
at Clifton College.

NOTE.—Those marked * are ready, those marked † are in the Press;
and the others are in preparation

ELEMENTARY.

- * EBNER.—Walther von der Vogelweide. Edited by E. H. G. NORTH,
Wellington College. 2s
* GOEBEL.—Hermann der Oherusker Edited by J. ESSER, Madras College,
St Andrews. 2s.
† GOEBEL.—Rubezahl. Edited by D. B. HURLEV, Newcastle Middle School
SCHMIDT.—Reineke Fuchs. Edited by A. L. GASKIN, Bath College
* SCHRADER.—Friedrich der Grosse. Edited by R. H. ALLPRESS, City of
London School.
* WACHENHEUSEN.—Vom ersten bis zum letzten Schuss. Edited by T. H.
BAYLEV, Loretto School 2s. 6d.
† von WILDENBRUCH.—Das edle Blut. Edited by OTTO SIEPMANN, Clifton
College.
ZASTROW.—Wilhelm der Siegreiche. Edited by E. P. ASH, Haileybury
College.

Others to follow.

ADVANCED.

- * ELSTER.—Zwischen den Schlachten Edited by Dr HIRSCH, Alleen's
School, Dulwich 3s 6d
* FONTANE.—Vor dem Sturm. Edited by Prof. WEISS, R.M.A.,
Woolwich. 3s.
† FREYTAG.—Die Ahnen. Part I. Ingo. Edited by OTTO SIEPMANN, Clifton
College.
GOETHE.—Die italienische Reise Edited by Prof. FIEDLER, Birmingham
University.
* GOETHE.—Iphigenie auf Tauris. Edited by H. R. COTTERILL, M.A. 3s.
* GRILLPARZER.—Sappho, Trauerspiel. Edited by Prof. RIFFMANN,
Queen's College, London. 3s
HEINE.—Die Harzreise. Edited by Dr. SCHLAPP, Edinburgh University.
von KLEIST.—Michael Kohlhaas. Edited by R. T. CARTER, Clifton College
* KURZ.—Die Humanisten. Edited by A. VÖGELIN, St Paul's School,
London. 2s. 6d
ROSEGGER.—Als ich jung noch war. Edited by Prof. SCHÜDDEKOPF, The
Yorkshire College, Leeds.
† von SCHEFFEL.—Der Trompeter von Sakkingen Edited by E. L. MILNER-
BARRY, Mill Hill School.
von WILDENBRUCH.—Die Danaide. Edited by Dr. BREUL, Cambridge
University.

Others to follow.

Word and Phrasebooks, with German translation, for Home-work. 6d. each.

MACMILLAN AND CO., LTD., LONDON.

A PUBLIC SCHOOL GERMAN PRIMER,

Comprising a First Reader, Grammar, and Exercises, with some remarks on German Pronunciation, and full Vocabularies. By OTTO SIEPMANN, Head of the Modern Language Department at Clifton College.
Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d

PRESS OPINIONS.

JOURNAL OF EDUCATION.—"Mr. Siepmann says in his preface that 'the present volume is an attempt to apply the principles of the *Neuere Richtung* to the teaching of German in public schools, as far as this is feasible under existing circumstances.' The attempt is successful, and we have here a book which, in the hands of a competent teacher, will prove a most satisfactory introduction to German.

"We recommend this book very warmly, as being, indeed, the first attempt to introduce in our public schools some of the more important results arrived at by the German reformers in modern language teaching."

SCHOOL BOARD CHRONICLE.—"Mr. Siepmann's *Primer* has qualities which lead us to commend it with emphasis to the attention of class teachers of German. Without rushing to any extreme, the author has produced what we think will commend itself to experienced and open-minded teachers as a very practical and attractive modification of methods that are becoming antiquated, and one uniting in a very large degree the force of imitation, with those of reasoning and of memory.

"Quite of a piece with the careful and practical character of the whole, are the interesting and useful explanations of the preface, which may be regarded as addressed primarily to teachers, but also to practical educationists at large. Not less for the purposes of Evening Continuation Schools and the Higher Standards of Elementary Schools, than for the Public Schools which the author had especially in mind, is such a work of practical interest at the present time."

EDUCATION.—"Mr. Siepmann's *German Primer* deserves more than a passing notice. It is a deliberate attempt to introduce into English schools, as far as possible, the principles of the *Neuere Richtung*, which have on the Continent revolutionized the teaching of modern languages. Type, arrangement, and references are all good and accurate. We have tested them in several ways. This is the only complete book on the new system that we have seen, and we hope its publication will do much to make the early study of the German language more thorough."

THE MODERN LANGUAGE TEACHERS' GUIDE.—"Every page of this book shows unmistakably that it is the work of a singularly able practical teacher. It is the only book for public school use which consistently carries out the principles of the New Method. It will undoubtedly achieve very great success."

A PUBLIC SCHOOL GERMAN PRIMER.

By OTTO SIEPMANN

PRESS OPINIONS.—*Continued.*

THE MODERN LANGUAGE QUARTERLY.—"It contains a reader, grammar, and writer, the exercises in the reader and writer being in duplicate, so that boys who are not moved up to a higher form need not necessarily be taken over familiar ground again. The system of the book is satisfactory, and a careful examination of it leads us to believe that pupils should be able to attain a sound knowledge of the elements of German within a year or so, if the teacher follows out the instructions of Mr. Siepmann. Reading, writing, speaking form part of each lesson, and every extract for translation or retranslation is illustrative of some part of the grammar of the language.

"The extracts for translation into English are carefully graduated, and lead up to some pieces from standard authors, such as Lessing and Heine. The grammar is complete in itself. Beginners will derive their grammatical training from it, and it is, therefore, important that in method and arrangement it should reach a high standard of excellence. We may say at once that we should find it hard to instance another outline of German Grammar of equal merit.

"We recommend the book to the attention of Teachers of Modern Languages, who have not yet become acquainted with it."

EDUCATIONAL NEWS.—"The assistant master at Clifton College has not only formed a satisfactory *Lehrplan*, but has made it possible to carry out his plan practically and livingly. The vocabulary is not a mere lexicon of words and their synonyms. The words are annotated where requisite with historical, geographical, as well as linguistic explanations. This single, useful, and wisely-arranged book contains all that is required for an average school year."

SCHOOL GUARDIAN.—"The system suggested in the above volume is eminently practical. The book is clear and well arranged, and any teacher who follows Mr. Siepmann's advice should experience no difficulty in giving his pupils a thoroughly sound and practical knowledge of German."

SCHOOLMASTER.—"Mr. Siepmann's book is a useful combination of Reader, Grammar and Exercises. The Reading Lessons begin with very simple sentences and by careful graduation arrive at fairly difficult passages in prose and verse."

GLASGOW HERALD.—"The system is undoubtedly a good one, it has been carefully worked out, and ought to produce good results."

MACMILLAN AND CO., LTD., LONDON.

